BRITANNIA REFLORESCENS,

In a Prospect of the

Ancient and now Flourishing STATE of

Great Britain:

Wherein, after a Description of the Island, with its Air, Soil, and Commodities;

Is Contained,

1. A full Account of the *Inhabitants*, together with the *Laws*, *Religion*, *Manners*, *Language*, *Stature*, *Diet*, *Traffick*, *Shipping*, &c. of the ancient *Britains*.
2. An *Historico*-Political Discourse of the Original and Excellency of Monarchical Government; whereunto this Island is shewn to have been always Subjected.
3. A full Relation of the Discovery, Invasion, and Conquest thereof by the *Romans*, with their manner of Governing this Island.
4. The Introduction of Christianity thereinto.
5. The Government & State of this Island after the *Romans* Departure, till such time as the *British* Monarchy was quite overthrown by the prevailing *Saxons*.
6. The Restauration thereof by King *James*, together with a Genealogical Table; shewing our present dread Soveraign to be by right of Primogeniture the next and undoubted Heir to *Cadwalladar*, the last King of the *Britains*.
7. A View of the present Government of *Great Britain*, and therein of the Name, Title, Arms, Dominions, Strength, Prerogative, &c. of its Monarch.
8. A Discourse, shewing from Reason, Law, and History; the unalterableness of the Hereditary Succession to this Imperial Crown.
9. A brief Recapitulation of the Life of His present Majesty, with the Life of the Duke of *York*; and the rest of the Princes and Princesses of the Royal Blood of Great *Britain*.

London, Printed by *T. Milbourn*, for *Christopher Hussey*, at the *Flower-de-Luce* in *Little Britain*. 1684.

THE PREFACE.

THis little Treatiſe is but the firſt Part of an intended larger Work, the Deſign whereof (as appears in the Title-Page) is to exhibit, as in a Mirror, a view of the ancient and modern State not only of this our Iſland of GREAT BRITAIN, but alſo of Ireland, and all other His MAJESTIES Dominions and Territories: not by writing a continued Chronicle or Hiſtory of all the Kings or Princes, reigning ſucceſſively in them; but only by giving an Account of ſuch ſignal Mutations, as made any conſiderable Change in the Adminiſtration of the Government either in Church or State.

The Preface.

In this part (which treats of Britain *in general) after a ſhort Deſcription of the Iſland, and a brief Account of the ancient Inhabitants thereof (from whom not only our preſent* Cambro-Britains, *but thoſe alſo of* Armorica *or little* Britain *in* France *are deſcended) is inſerted a Diſcourſe (which, tho it may ſeem a Digreſſion, is neither long nor impertinent) touching the Original and Excellency of* Monarchical *Government, to which and none other, this our Iſland has been ſo fortunate, as to have been* Subjected *from its very firſt being inhabited to this very Day.*

Hereunto I was forced by the audacious Scribles *of certain profligate Wretches, who, that they may the eaſilier inſtigate the Vulgar to a contempt of the* Sacred *Authority of their Prince, and thereby make way for the overturning of this famous* Monarchy, *and the introducing of Popular Tyranny in its place, endeavour to debaſe Monarchy it ſelf, affirming* the moſt High and Sacred Order of Kings, which is the Ordinance of GOD himſelf, founded in the prime Laws of Nature, and clearly eſtabliſhed by expreſs Texts both of the Old and New Teſtaments, *to be*

be a meer human Creature, taking its Original from the Conſent of the People, by whom Soveraignty *is conveyed unto Kings in truſt only, and by Communication, and conſequently that the* People *may (whenſoever they pleaſe) reſume this* Power, *and call their Truſtees to an account.*

Theſe are the pernicious Maxims, which ſo lately intoxicated the three Kingdoms, and are now again for the like purpoſe taken up by our preſent Republicans, and daily diſperſt by the ſcurrilous Pamphleteers *of theſe times, one of which (who inſolently preſumes to dedicate his treaſonable Libels to a moſt Noble and Loyal* Peer) *falls foul upon the Learned* Sr. Robert Filmer *for deriving the Regal Authority from the paternal, inſtituted by* God *himſelf; tho this verity be not only expreſly delivered in the Holy Scriptures, which declare, that the firſt Government in the World was* Monarchical *in the Father of all Fleſh, but was by the very glimmerings of Natural Reaſon diſcovered by* Ariſtotle, *who, ſpeaking of the Original of* Monarchy, *ſaith:* The firſt Society made of many Houſes is a Village, which ſeems moſt agreeable to nature, as

as being a Colony of Families, which ſome call Foſter-brethren, or Children and Childrens Children. Therefore at firſt Cities were, and now alſo Nations are Governed by Kings, becauſe ſuch came together, as were under Kingly Government. For the eldeſt in every Houſe is King, and ſo for Kindred ſake it is in Colonies, that is, in more Families, which are deſcended from the ſame Houſe: whence *Homer* ſaith, Every man gives Laws to his Wives and Children. *Hence it is by all ancient Writers acknowledged, that the firſt Commonweals were governed by* Monarchs; *nor indeed was there any other Government known in the World for above three thouſand years, till ſome ambitious Fellows among the giddy* Grecians, *a People alwayes delighted in Novelties, rebelled againſt their* Soveraigns, *and uſurped their Authority; as was lately here done by the Rump-Parliament, and is now again aimed at by the Factors for the* Good-Old-Cauſe.

The better to excite my fellow Subjects to a dutiful Submiſſion *to our common Father the King, I have reminded them, that all thoſe Rights and* Priviledges, *to the* Preſervation *whereof (tho neither infringed,*

nor

nor in danger of being ſo) the popular Demagogues pretend to call them forth, when their real deſign is utterly to deſtroy and take away both the Regal Prerogative *and the Peoples Liberties, are originally the Conceſſions of their Princes; and therefore that, as it is the height of Ingratitude to employ the Favours of their Soveraign to the diſturbance of his Government: ſo it is an exceſs of Folly, to think to ſecure their Liberties by the pulling down or weakning that Authority, which, as it firſt gave them, ſo is alone capable to protect and maintain them. This, tho it may ſeem ſtrange to thoſe, that have their Heads filled with the Chimerical Conceits of the natural Freedom and Equality of Mankind, and the firſt founding of Government by the Multitude, upon ſuch Terms and Conditions, as to their Wiſdoms ſeemed fit, is yet clearly manifeſt from the Hiſtories and Records of all Ages and Nations, and particularly of this Kingdom of* England: *of which it was well obſerved by the late Lord Keeper* Bridgman, *then Lord chief Baron, at the Tryal of the Regicides:* It is true we have as great Liberties, as any People have in *Chriſtendom*, in the World: but let us own them, where they are due.

We

as being a Colony of Families, which ſome call Foſter-brethren, or Children and Childrens Children. Therefore at firſt Cities were, and now alſo Nations are Governed by Kings, becauſe ſuch came together, as were under Kingly Government. For the eldeſt in every Houſe is King, and ſo for Kindred ſake it is in Colonies, that is, in more Families, which are deſcended from the ſame Houſe: whence *Homer* ſaith, Every man gives Laws to his Wives and Children. *Hence it is by all ancient Writers acknowledged, that the firſt Commonweals were governed by* Monarchs; *nor indeed was there any other Government known in the World for above three thouſand years, till ſome ambitious Fellows among the giddy* Grecians, *a People alwayes delighted in Novelties, rebelled againſt their* Soveraigns, *and uſurped their Authority; as was lately here done by the Rump-Parliament, and is now again aimed at by the Factors for the* **Good-Old-Cauſe.**

The better to excite my fellow Subjects *to a dutiful* Submiſſion *to our common Father the King, I have reminded them, that all thoſe Rights and* Priviledges, *to the* Preſervation *whereof (tho neither infringed, nor*

nor in danger of being ſo) the popular Demagogues pretend to call them forth, when their real deſign is utterly to deſtroy and take away both the Regal Prerogative *and the Peoples Liberties, are originally the Conceſſions of their Princes; and therefore that, as it is the height of Ingratitude to employ the Favours of their Soveraign to the diſturbance of his Government: ſo it is an exceſs of Folly, to think to ſecure their Liberties by the pulling down or weakning that Authority, which, as it firſt gave them, ſo is alone capable to protect and maintain them. This, tho it may ſeem ſtrange to thoſe, that have their Heads filled with the Chimerical Conceits of the natural Freedom and Equality of Mankind, and the firſt founding of Government by the Multitude, upon ſuch Terms and Conditions, as to their Wiſdoms ſeemed fit, is yet clearly manifeſt from the Hiſtories and Records of all Ages and Nations, and particularly of this Kingdom of* England: *of which it was well obſerved by the late Lord Keeper* Bridgman, *then Lord chief Baron, at the Tryal of the Regicides:* It is true we have as great Liberties, as any People have in *Chriſtendom*, in the World: but let us own them, where they are due.

We

We have them by the Conceſſions of our Princes. Our Princes have granted them: and the King now, He in them hath granted them likewiſe.

After this Account of the Original and Excellency of Monarchy, to which Government alone, I briefly ſhew, that this Iſland has been alwayes ſubjected, I proceed to the Conqueſt thereof by the Romans, *and thence to ſuch other Mutations, as happned therein unto the time of* Cadwalladar, *who in the Year* 689 *quitting his Kingdom, of which the* Saxons *had gotten the beſt part, a Period was put to the* Britiſh *Monarchy, the very Name of King of* Britain *not being ſo much as heard of till the happy Union of the Kingdoms of* England *and* Scotland *by the Succeſſion of His Majeſties Grandfather King* James *of famous Memory to the Crown of* England, *whoſe Genealogy from* Cadwalladar *I have here ſet down, clearly demonſtrating his preſent Sacred Majeſty to be the true and undoubted Heir of the ſaid* Britiſh *King, as he is alſo of the* Saxon, Norman, *and* Scotiſh *Kings, and conſequently to have a clearer Right to this* Monarchy, *than any private man can pretend to his Eſtate.*

After this Relation of ſuch Mutations,

as

as concern Britain *in general, I give a general Account of the present Government of this Island. And here according to my Duty, and the Oath of Supremacy, which declaring the King to be the only Supreme Governour, admits neither Equal nor Superior, I assert the Soveraignty of our Lord the King, and shew, that there is not in our (nor can indeed be in any)* Monarchy *any Authority, but what is derived from the* Monarch, *in opposition to the pernicious Doctrine of Coordinacy, daily by the Ringleaders of the Faction dispersed amongst the People, and endeavored to be justified by the Author of* Plato Redivivus, *and* T. H. *the former of which, speaking of the late Parliamentary Rebellion, saith:* This is certain, that whereever two Coordinate Powers do differ, and there be no Power on earth to reconcile them otherwise, nor Umpire, they will, *de facto*, fall together by the ears. *And the latter not only tells us in express terms, that* the Parliament derive their Power and Authority from the same Original, the King derives His; *but by affirming, that there are Treasons of State other than those, that are declared by the Statutes, and such as the King cannot pardon, would prostitute*

the

the Lives of all his fellow Subjects to the Arbitrary Power *of any prevailing Faction, which may at any time happen to be in the two Houſes of Parliament, or perhaps in the Houſe of Commons alone,* the onely part *(if we will believe the Author of* Plato Redivivus) which is now left intire of the old Conſtitution.

And becauſe the Heads of the Faction, that they might leave no Stone unturn'd, which might be made uſe of for the battering down of this Hereditary Monarchy, have eſſayed to ſubvert it by impeaching the Deſcent of the Crown in the Right Line, I have treated upon the of late much controverted Point *of the Succeſſion, which I have demonſtrated to be unalterable by any Statute or Act of Parliament whatever, and as ſuch to have been acknowledged by all our Ancient Parliaments, that were neither over-awed by Force, nor ſeduced by Faction.*

Having thus, with what Brevity I could, handled theſe foregoing matters, I conclude this Part with a ſhort account of the preſent Monarch *of* Great Britain, *Our Soveraign Lord the KING now Reigning (whom GOD long preſerve to the Conſolation and Happineſs of this Iſland) of his Queen, and the Princes of his Royal Blood.*

And

And becauſe the ill-willers to the Peace of this our Iſrael *have raiſed in the minds of the unthinkiug Vulgar terrible Fears and Apprehenſions of his Royal Highneſs, whom, the readilier to ſtir up againſt him the Animoſity of the people, they have audaciouſly loaded with all the Calumnies and Scandals, which the Malice of Men or Devils could invent, I have endeavoured by a true (tho imperfect) Repreſentation of his Geſts and Character to remove that Prejudice, which theſe horrid and malicious Falſities may have created againſt him in the Spirits of the unwary.*

If theſe my Endeavors ſhall prove uſeful for the reducing of any of my deluded Countrymen to that natural Obedience, which we owe to our Soveraign, I ſhall repute my ſelf abundantly ſatisfied for my pains, and ſhall be encouraged to compleat the reſt of my deſigned Work.

THE

THE TABLE.

A

Absoluteness of Paternal Jurisdiction. 57

Act of Parliament in *Scotland*, declaring the unalterableness of the Succession. 241

Adam Monarch of the Universe. 53

Adraste a Goddess of the *Britains*. 27

Agricola Governour of *Britain*. 103

Air of *Great-Britain*. 9

St. *Albanus* Protomartyr of *Britain*. 131

Ambrosius King of the *Britains*. 154

St. *Amphibalus* Martyred. 132

Arbitrary Power necessary in all Governments. 58

St. *Aristobulus* in *Britain*. 119

Armor and Weapons of the ancient *Britains.* 43
Arms of King *Lucius.* 178
——of King *Vortigern.* *ibid.*
——of King *Aurelius Ambroſius.* *ibid.*
——of *Uter Pendragon.* *ibid.*
——of King *Arthur.* *ibid.*
——of *Cadwalladar.* *ibid.*
——of the King of *Great Britain* ſince the Union of *England* and *Scotland.* 179
——of the preſent Queen of *Great Britain.* 268
Attire of the ancient *Britains.* 42

B

Bangor a Seminary of Learning. 129
Baptiſm of the King. 248
Bardiacus a Garment of the ancient *Britains.* 43
Bards. 28
Beauty of the *Britiſh* Women. 41
Belerus a God of the *Britains.* 27
Beliſama a Goddeſs of the *Britains.* *ibid.*
Bill of Excluſion. 236
Birth of the King. 247
——of the Queen. 266
Boadicea Queen of the *Iceni* in *Britain.* 101
Brachæ a Garment of the ancient *Britains.* 43
Britain quitted by the *Romans.* 143

The Table.

Britiſh Biſhops at the Councel of *Arles.* 139
——at the Councel of *Nice.* 142
Britiſh Monarchy reſtored by King *James.* 156
Buildings of the ancient *Britains.* 48

C

Caligula's Attempt againſt *Britain.* 93
Caſſibelan. 87
Chariots of the ancient *Britains.* 49
CHARLES the Iſt. King of *Great Britain* murdered by his Phanatical Subjects. 170
Children of King CHARLES the Iſt. 269
Chriſtianity firſt brought into *Britain.* 117
——reſtored by *Conſtantin.* 135
Cimbri firſt Inhabitants of *Britain.* 20
Claudius Druſus the Emperor in *Britain.* 98
Climate of *Great Britain.* 3
Coming of the King into *Scotland* 251
Commodities of *Great Britain* 12
Community of Women amongſt the ancient *Britains.* 37
Computation of time by the ancient *Britains.* 51
Conqueſt of *Britain* by the *Romans.* 94
Conſtantius Chlorus the Emperor in *Britain.* 133
Converſion of King *Lucius* to *Chriſtianity.* 123
Cornage. 111

Coro-

The Table.

Coronotion of the King. 260
Covinus. 49
Court of the King, when Prince of *Wales.* 248
Cure of the Kings-Evil. 219

D

DEparture of the King out of *England.* 250
Deſcent of King *James* from *Cadwalladar.* 158
Diet of the ancient *Britains.* 41
Dimenſions of *Great Britain.* 3
Diſcovery of *Britain* by the *Romans.* 77
Diſorder of popular Government exemplified in the *Roman* Democracy. 69
Diſtinction of Monarchy into Deſpotical and Paternal groundleſs. 57
Divinity of the King. 212
Diviſion of *Britain.* 2
——of *Great Britain.* 5
Dominions of Princes anciently ſmall. 64
——of the King of *Great Britain.* 180
Druids. 29

The Table.

E

EDucation of the King. 249
End of Government. 67
Epiſcopal Sees in *Britain*. 125
Eſcape of the King from *Worceſter*. 252
Eſſedum. 50
Excellency of Monarchy. 67
Excommunication uſed by the ancient *Britains*. 38
Extent of *Britain* taken in the largeſt Senſe. 1

F

FRontinus Governour of *Britain*. 103

G

GAlgacus General of the *Britains*. 108
Gauls in *Britain*. 20
Gaunacum a Garment of the ancient *Britains*. 43
Genealogy of the King 245
——of the Queen. 263
Giants in *Britain*. 32
Gods of the ancient *Britains*. 26
Government. 52
——of *Britain* always Monarchical. 73.

Govern-

The Table.

Government of *Britain* under the *Romans*. 112
——Civil as ordered by *Constantin*. 113
——Military. 114
——after the *Romans* Depature. 144
——present of *Great Britain*. 172
Greeks in *Britain*. 21

H

HArdiness of the ancient *Britains*. 37
Hesus a God of the *Britains*. 26
Hues a God of the *Britains*. *ibid.*

I

St. *James* the Apostle in *Britain*. 113
JESUS CHRIST, the Saviour of the World, born. 116
Inhabitants of *Great Britain*. 19
Invasion of *Britain* by the *Romans*. 84
Jointure of the Queen. 267
St. *Joseph* of *Arimathea* in *Britain*. 120
Julius Cæsar in *Britain*. 77
Jurisdiction of the *Druids*. 30

K

KIng sole Legislator. 204
——supreme Landlord of all Lands within His Dominions. 206

King

King ſupreme Adminiſtrator of Juſtice. 209
——has the ſole Power of the Sword. 211

L

LAnguage of the ancient *Britains*. 39
Laws of the ancient *Britains*. 23
Limited Monarchy. 62

M

MAnners of the ancient *Britains*. 25
Manner of Fighting uſed by the ancient *Britains*. 49
St. *Marcellus* in *Britain*. 122
Marriage of the King. 262
——of the Queen. 266
Mary Queen of *Scotland* expelled her Kingdom by *Presbyterian* Rebels. 169
Miſſletoe. 34
Mixed Monarchy. 63
Monarchy. 52
Money of the ancient *Britains*. 46
Monks according to the Rule of St. *Mark* the Evangeliſt. 129

The Table.

N

NAme of *Britain*. 2
——of the Monarch of *Great Britain*. 175
——of the preſent King. 244
——of the Queen. 263
Nations erected at the Confuſion of Tongues Seventy two. 55
Nimrod. 64
Noah divided the Earth amongſt his Sons. 54

O

OFfice of the King of *Great Britain*. 193
Ogmius a God of the *Britains*. 28
Onvana a Goddeſs of the *Britains*. 27
Prince of *Orange*. 286
Original of Monarchy. 52
——of the Family of the *Stuarts*. 162
Oſtorius Scapula Governor of *Britain*. 99

P

PAinting of the ancient *Britains*. 44
St. *Paul* the Apoſtle in *Britain*. 119
Peace enjoyed by no People without Monarchy. 68
Period of the *Britiſh* Kingdom. 155

Per-

Perſecution of the *Chriſtians* in *Britain*. 130
Perſon of the King. 188
St. *Peter* the Apoſtle in *Britain*. 118
St. *Peters Cornhil* built. 128
Petilius *Crealis*, Governor of *Britain*. 103
Petronius *Turpilianus* Governour of *Britain*. ibid
Phœnicians in *Britain*. 21
Picts. 22
Picts and *Scots* annoy the *Britains*. 144
A Plautius ſent into *Britain*. 94
Portion of the Queen. 267
Prerogatives of the King. 193
Prieſts of the ancient *Britains*. 28
Prince Elector *Palatine*. 288
Proclamations. 196
Progeny of *Cadwalladar* continued to his preſent Majeſty. 163
Puniſhments of the ancient *Britains*. 38

R

REcords of the antient *Britains*. 40
Recreation of the antient *Britains*. 45
Religion of the antient *Britains*. 25
Reſpect of the King. 220
Reſtauration of the King. 256
Right of Government deſcends to the eldeſt Son. 54

Rights

The Table.

Rights and Priviledges of the People originally the Conceſſions of Priuces. 61

Romans in *Britain*. 28

Prince *Rupert*. 289

S

SAcrifices of the ancient *Britains*. 32

Saxons. 23

——hired by the *Britains* againſt the *Picts* and *Scots*. 150

Scots. 23

Simplicity of the ancient *Britains*. 36

Shipping of the ancient *Britains*. 46

Soil of *Great Britain*. 10

Soveraignty of the King. 203

Queen of *Spain* 287

Stature of the ancient *Britains*. 40

Strength of the Monarch of *Great Britain*. 181

Succeſſion to the Crown of *Great Britain*. 224

Suetonius Governour of *Britain*. 101

Suetonius a *Britain* firſt Planter of *Chriſtianity* amongſt the *Helvetians*. 118

Surname of the King. 244

Swiftneſs of the ancient *Britains*. 41

T

Taramis a God of the *Britains*. 26
St. *Timotheus*, Son of *Pudens*, in *Britain*. 122
Title of the King. 175
Traffick of the ancient *Britains*. 45
Trinobantes revolt to *Cæsar*. 90
Tutates a God of the *Britains*. 26

V

VAlor of the ancient *Britains*. 36
Vortigern chosen King of the *Britains*. 146
——hires the *Saxons*. 150
Vortimer chosen an Associate to his Father *Vortigern* in the Kingdom. 151
——poysoned by the procurement of *Rowena*. 152
Uter Pendragon King of *Britain*. 154

W

Wales subjected to the Crown of *England*. 166
Westminster Church built. 129
Wicker Image. 32
Winchester Church built. 129

The Table.

Y

Duke of York. ——— His Wives and Children. 272 283

ERRA-

ERRATA.

PAg. 18. in the Margin read *Gaſcoign then*, p. 31. lin. 18. dele *the*, p. 32. l. 2. r. *ſo to do*. p. 33. l. 27. r. *and Buſhes*. p. 74. l. 12. r. *contradicting*. p. 81. l. 5. r. *unlookt-for Accident*. p. 89. l. 13. r. *retired*. p. 122. l. 21. r. *Praxedes*. p. 131. l. 17. r. *Caſſock*. p. 135. l. 17. r. *particularly*, p. 161. l. 18. for *not named* r. *named Neſt* p. 165. l. 6. r. *His inheritance*. p. 172. l. penult. r. *hereditary*, p. 173. l. 9. r. *Empire*, p. 179 l. 20. r. *Droit*, p. 188. l. 18. r. *manners*, p. 199. l. 11. r. *Commonweal*, p. 216. l. 15. r. *thirty fifth*, p, 251. in the *Marg.* r. *Scotland*. p. 266. l. 13. r. *her Mother*. p. 292. l. 28. r. *fatality*.

OF

OF BRITAIN In General.

CHAP. I.

Of Britain *in the largeſt Senſe.*

BRITAIN in the general and more comprehenſive ſignification contains all thoſe Iſlands both great and ſmall, which lye about *Albion*, or *Britain* properly ſo called. *Ex adverſo hujus* (ſaith *Ptolomey*, ſpeaking of *France*) Britannia *Inſula*, Albion *ipſi nomen fuit*, *cum* Britanniæ *omnes vocarentur*. The whole Dominion of which Iſlands is at preſent united under the Command of the King of *Great Britain*. Extent.

Diviſion. They are diſtinguiſhed into the Greater and Leſſer: The Greater are *Great Britain* and *Ireland*; The Leſſer are, 1 The *Orcades*, 2 The *Hebrides*, 3 *Man*, 4 *Angleſey*, 5 The Iſlands of the *Severn* Sea, 6 The *Sorlinges* or Iſles of *Scilly*, 7 *Wight*, 8 *Thanet*, 9 *Sunderland*, 10 *Holy Iſland*.

CHAP. II.

Of the Name of Britain, *of its Climate, Dimenſions, Diviſion, Air, Soil, and Commodities.*

Name. GREAT BRITAIN, or *Britain* properly ſo called, without compariſon the beſt and moſt flouriſhing Iſland of the whole World, is ſaid to have been firſt named *Samothea* from *Samothes*, ſuppoſed to have reigned here *Anno Mundi* 1910. It was afterwards called *Albion*, either from ΑΛΒΙΟΝ *Happy*, or *ab albis rupibus* from its White Cliffs, or (more probably) from King *Albion*. By degrees the Name *Britain* was appropriated to this Iſland, the reſt having their

their particular Names. It was called *Britain* either from two *Britiſh* Words *Pryd* and *Cain*, ſignifying **Beauty** and **White**, or from Πεντανεῖα *Metals*, or from the *Britiſh* Word *Brith* **Painted**, the *Greeks* adding Ταυία *a Region*, or from the *Phœnician* Word *Barat-Anac* **A Land of Tynne**, in which ſenſe the *Britiſh* Iſlands were by the *Greeks* called *Caſſiterides*, or from King *Brutus*, reigning here (as is alledged) *Anno Mundi* 2855.

It is ſituated from fifty Degrees ſix Minutes in the ſixteenth Parallel and eighth Climate to ſixty Degrees thirty Minutes in the twenty ſixth Parallel, and thirteenth Climate; Lying thus under the eighth, ninth, tenth, eleventh, twelfth and thirteenth Climates: Inſomuch that the longeſt Day in the moſt Northern parts is eighteen Hours and three quarters, and the ſhorteſt Day in the moſt Southern neer eight Hours long. Climate

It is in Length from the *Lyzard-Point* Southward in *Cornwal* to the *Straithy-head* in the North of *Scotland*, ſix hundred twenty four Miles; in Dimenſions.

Breadth from the *Lands-end* in *Cornwal* in the Weſt to *Dover* in the Eaſt two hundred and eighty; the whole compaſs thereof (allowing for the Turnings and Windings of the Shores) is eighteen hundred thirty ſix Miles, thus reckoned: From *Dunsby-Heate* to the *Lands-end* eight hundred and twelve; from the *Lands-end* to the *Foreland* of *Kent*, three hundred and twenty; from the *Foreland* of *Kent* to *Dunsby-Heate* ſeven hundred and four. It is the greateſt Iſland of the whole World, except *Java*, *Borneo*, *Sumatra*, *Madagaſcar*, and *Groenland*, and was therefore by the Antients (to whom theſe were unknown) called *The other World*. It is bounded on the Eaſt with the *German* Ocean, dividing it from *Belgium*, *Germany*, and *Denmark*; on the Weſt with *St. Georges* Chanel, ſeparating it from *Ireland*; on the Northweſt with the *Vergivian* or Weſtern Ocean, of which the Antients knew no Shore; on the North with the *Deucalidon* Seas; and on the South with the *Engliſh* Chanel, parting it from *France*. It is in form triangular; but by ſome ſaid to have the Reſemblance of a great Snake, the

the Head whereof with a wide-gaping Mouth, looks toward *Norway*, and part of *Denmark*, his Tail extending to the West.

It is said to have been divided by *Brutus* into *Locgria*, now called **England**, *Cambria* **Wales**, and *Albania* **Scotland**. But it was found by *Julius Cæsar* divided into several petty Provinces or Kingdomes, the Names whereof follow. Division

1. *Cantii*, or the Inhabitants of **Kent.**
2. *Regni*, **Sussex** and **Surrey.**
3. *Durothriges*, **Dorsetshire.**
4. *Damnonii*, **Devon** and **Cornwall.**
5. *Belgæ*, **Somerset**, **Wilts**, and **Hampshire.**
6. *Attrebatii*, **Berkshire.**
7. *Dobuni*, **Oxford** and **Glocestershire.**
8. *Catieuchlani*, **Warwick**, **Bucks** and **Bedfordshire.**
9. *Trinobantes*, **Hartford**, **Essex**, and **Middlesex.**

10. *Iceni*, Suffolk, Norfolk, and Cambridgſhire.

11. *Coritani*, Northampton, Lincoln, Leiceſter, Rutland, Derby, and Nottinghamſhire.

12. *Cornabii*, Stafford, Worceſter, Cheſhire, and Shropſhire.

13. *Brigantes Pariſii*, Lancaſhire, York, Richmond, Durham, Weſtmorland, and Cumberland.

14. *Ordovices*, Flint, Denbigh, Merioneth, Caernarvan, and Montgomeryſhire.

15. *Silures*, Hereford, Radnor, Brecknock, Monmouth, and Glamorganſhire.

16. *Dimetæ*, Pembroke, Cardigan, and Caermardenſhire.

17. *Ottadini*, Northumberland, Teſidale, Twedale, Merch, and Louthien.

18. *Selgovai*, Lideſdale, Euſdale, Eskdale, Annandale, and Niddeſdale.

19. *Novantes*, Kile, Carick, Galloway, and Cuningham.

20. *Dam-*

20. *Damnii*, Fife, Renfraw, Cluydsdale, Lennox, Striveling, and Menteth.

21. *Caledonii Gadini*, Perth, Strathern, Albin, Argile, and Loyne.

22. *Epidii*, Cantire.

23. *Vicemagi*, Murray.

24. *Venricones*, Hernia, Anguis, Mar.

25. *Tazali*, Buquhane.

26. *Cantæ*, *Creones*, *Cerontes*, Rosse, Southerland.

27. *Carnonacæ*, *Carini*, *Carnabii*, Stratnavern.

28. *Simertæ*, *Logi*, Caithnes.

After *Britain* was conquered by the *Romans*, it was by them divided into *Britannia Prima*, *Britannia Secunda*, and *Maxima Cæsariensis*: The first of these containing the South parts, the second all that Western part, now called *Wales*, and the third the Northern parts beyond *Trent*. It was afterward divided into *Britannia Major*, now called England, and *Minor*, which is Scotland.

The *Britains*, having received the *Chriſtian* Faith, did (for the better Government Eccleſiaſtical) divide the ſame into three Provinces or Archbiſhopricks: *viz.* the Archbiſhoprick of *London*, containing *Britannia Prima*; the Archbiſhoprick of *York*, comprehending *Maxima Cæſarienſis*; and the Archbiſhoprick of *Caerleon* upon *Uſk*, under which was *Britannia Secunda*. The Heathen *Saxons* afterward overrunning the South part of this Iſland, and dividing it into ſeven Kingdoms, the King of *Kent* being firſt converted to the *Chriſtian* Faith by *St. Auſtin*, the Archiepiſcopal See of *London* was removed to *Canterbury*; that of *Caerleon* was tranſlated to St. *Davids* in *Pembrokeſhire*, and at laſt ſubjected to the See of *Canterbury*; the Archbiſhoprick of *York*, under which was the North of *England*, and all *Scotland*, keeping ſtill its firſt place.

The *Britains* being by the prevailing *Saxons* forced to retire into the Weſtern parts beyond the River *Severn*, that part of the Iſland was by the ſaid *Saxons* called *Waliſhland*, ſince *Wales*; the Southern part, by them inhabited, named *England*; and the Northern part

part *Scotland*: and the Name of *Britain* ſeemed in a manner loſt, till ſuch time as, the Crown of *England* by indubitable Hereditary Right deſcending on the Royal Houſe of *Scotland*, King *James* of happy memory, Grandfather to our preſent Dread Soveraign, reuniting the Kingdoms, reſtored alſo the ancient Name of *Britain*, adding thereto the Epithet *Great*, the better to diſtinguiſh it from *Britannia Armorica*, a Province in the Realm of *France*.

The Air, tho different accor- Ayr.
ding to the many Climates, through which it runs, is generally milde and temperate: the continual Breezes, and gentle Winds from the Sea, the very often Interpoſition of Clouds between the Sun and Earth, and the frequent Showers of Rain qualifying the Heats and Droughts in Summer; and the warm Vapors of the invironing Seas mitigating the Cold in Winter, whoſe Froſts ſerve only to meliorate the cultivated Soil, and its Snow to keep warm the tender Plants. And tho in the moſt Northern parts of *Scotland* the Cold is much ſharper in

Winter, than in any other place of the Iſland, yet the great Plenty of Wood, and other Fewel hinders the Inhabitants from ſuffering much thereby. In a word the Cold is neither ſo piercing, nor the Heat ſo ſcorching, as that there ſhould be need of *Stoves* in Winter, or *Grottaes* in Summer.

Soyl. As the Ayr is kind and temperate, ſo the Soyl is fertil and wholſom, abundantly watered with Springs and Streams, and in many places with great Navigable Rivers, the moſt eminent whereof are the *Thames*, *Severn* and *Humber*. There are (eſpecially in the South part thereof, called *England*) few barren Hills, or craggy Rocks; and tho the Northern parts of *Scotland* are ſomewhat mountainous, yet there want not (even there) fruitful Valleys, apt for Grain, Graſs or Wood. Nay, that very Ground, which lies waſt and neglected in *England*, is (by men of no ſmall Judgment) thought far to exceed the Soyl of many Provinces on the Continent. The excellency of the Soyl is manifeſted by the Complexion of the Inhabitants, who therein exceed all other Nati-

Nations of the Univerſe. It is atteſted alſo by thoſe tranſcendent Elogies, given her by Antient and Modern Writers. *O happy* Britain (ſaid an antient *Panegyriſt* in the time of *Conſtantine* the *Great*) *and bleſſed above all other Regions: Nature hath enriched thee with all the Benefits both of Heaven and Earth, wherein there is neither extreme Cold in Winter, nor ſcorching Heat in Summer; wherein there is ſuch abundant Plenty of Corn, as may ſuffice both for Bread and Wine; wherein are Woods without Wild Beaſts, and Fields without noyſom Serpents, but infinite numbers of Milch-Cattle, and Sheep weighed down with rich Fleeces: And that, which is moſt comfortable, long Dayes, and lightſome Nights.* And long before that, it was called by *Orpheus The Seat of Queen* Ceres; as ſince by *Charles* the *Great The Storehouſe and Granary of the whole Weſtern World.* So that not undeſervedly does our *Engliſh Lucan* ſing.

The faireſt Land, that from her thruſts the reſt,
As if ſhe car'd not for the World beſide;
A World within her ſelf with wonders bleſt.

As

Commodities. As this our Iſland is ſeparated from the reſt of the habitable World: ſo Nature, like an indulgent Mother, has furniſhed it with ſo great abundance of all things, neceſſary for the life of Man, that it may eaſily ſubſiſt without the Contribution of any other part of the World.

Inſula prædives, quæ toto vix eget orbe,
Et cujus totus indiget orbis ope:
Inſula prædives, cujus miretur, & optet
Delicias Salomon, Octavianus *opes*,

ſaid old *Alfred* of *Beverly*, ſpeaking of *Britain*. And ſhould I here go about to enumerate the ſeveral ſorts of Grain, it bears, its vaſt abundance of Cattel, yielding wholſom and ſubſtantial Food, its great Plenty and Variety of Fiſh, Fowl, Fruit, edible Roots and Herbs, I might be thought by Strangers rather to reckon up the Works of Nature, than to deſcribe the Plenty of an Iſland. It hath indeed ſuch a conſtant continuance of all ſorts of neceſſary Food, that the Famin, which ſo often ravages other Countreys, has ſcarce been felt here theſe four hundred years. The uſual and natural drink of the People is Beer, Ale, Syder, Perry, and in ſome places *Metheglin* or *Mede*. As

As this Iſland affords its Inhabitants all neceſſary Food for the ſupport of their Life: ſo it yields them plenty of Rayment for their defence againſt the Injuries of the Weather. For it produceth (eſpecially in the South part called *England*) not only very fine Wooll, making excellently laſting, and well-conditioned Cloth; but alſo ſuch great abundance thereof, as ſerves not only for the Cloathing of all ſorts of People from the higheſt to the loweſt; but being manufactured into Cloth and Stuffs, is diſperſed all over the World, but eſpecially into *High-Germany*, *Muſcovia*, *Turky*, and *Perſia*, to the great benefit of its Inhabitants.

And as it thus abounds with Wool: ſo hath it Linen made therein, inferiour to none for its Goodneſs; nor would it need ſupply thereof from elſewhere for any uſe whatever, were the people but ſo induſtrious, as they might be, in ſowing Flax and Hemp, for the producing whereof they want not fitting Ground, tho there be at preſent (through their Sloth in neglecting to improve it) much Linen imported to the ſhame and damage of the Nation.

The

The Abundance of Cattel here ſlain furniſhes the People with great ſtore of excellent Leather for all ſorts of Uſes; inſomuch that the pooreſt of them were good Leathern Shooes, whereas in the neighboring Countries they either wear Wooden Shooes, or none at all.

For building it wants not any requiſite Materials, being well ſtored with Timber, Iron, Brick, Tiles, Slate, Lime, Lead, Glaſs, and Stone, of which our fine *Portland* Stone is not much inferior to Marble.

For fewel there is either Wood, Sea-Coal, or Pit-Coal, almoſt everywhere to be had at reaſonable rates; and where this is wanting, they burn Turfs or Peats.

For Shipping there is no where better Oak, no where ſuch Knee-timber, as the Shipwrights call it; or Iron to make ſerviceable Guns.

For War, Journeys, and Hunting; for Plow, Cart, and Carriages, there is ſuch abundant plenty of Horſes, that Aſſes and Mules, ſo frequently made uſe of in *France*, *Italy*, and *Spain*, are here utterly deſpiſed.

Dogs it hath of all ſorts, ſizes and uſes:

uſes: amongſt which the *Engliſh* Maſtiff deſervedly has the firſt Place from all others in the World, a Dog, bold and ſtout as a Lyon; and yet (when well bred) gentle and manageable, as a Lamb: and therefore of ſingular uſe for the Defence of Families againſt the Attempts of Thieves and Houſe-breakers.

It produceth likewiſe, beſides a mighty quantity of Tynn, Lead and Iron, ſome Braſs and Copper, and hath alſo Quickſilver, Antimony, Sulphur, Black-Lead, Orpiment red and yellow, Allom, Salt, Hops, Saffron, Liquoris, and divers other beneficial Commodities: and has ſeveral Silver-Mines, richer than thoſe of *Potoſi* in the *Weſt-Indies*, whence the King of *Spain* has moſt of his Silver: thoſe yielding uſually but an Ounce and an half of Silver in an hundred Ounces of Oar; and theſe ordinarily ſix or eight Ounces *per Cent.* But theſe Mines, lying deep, are hard to come unto, which in *Potoſi* is otherwiſe.

And (as if all this were not ſufficient) it yieldeth Phyſick likewiſe to the Inhabitants, having in it Hot Baths for the eaſe of Maims, Bruiſes, inward Aches

Aches and Paines, and abounding in Medicinal Springs.

And altho there be not much Wine made here at preſent, yet, if we ſhall conſider, that Vineyards were heretofore common in moſt of the Southern and middle parts of *England*, we ſhall eaſily be induced to attribute this Defect (if it be any) to the better improvement of our Ground, and the cheap and eaſy Importation of that and other forreign Commodities, the Advantages, it hath from all parts of the World to take in Trade and Merchandize, being ſo great, as abundantly verifies that of the Old Poet:

Quicquid amat Luxus, quicquid deſiderat Uſus,
Ex te proveniet, vel aliunde tibi.

In a word, tho this Iſland is by ſome Countries in ſome things excelled, yet if we conſider the Salubrity of the Air, free (in a manner) from violent Thunder and Lightning, unwholſom Serenes, and tempeſtuous Hurricanes, and well-ſtored with Birds and Fowls; the Fertility of the Soil, rarely ſubjected to Droughts, Inundations, or deſtructive Earthquakes, the Fields

Fields being laden with Corn, the Paſtures ſtockt with Cattel, the Foreſts, Parks (of which in *England* alone there are more, than in all *Europe* beſides) Warrens, and Woods ſtored with wild Beaſts only for Recreation and Food; the Amœnity and Utility of its Seas, Rivers and Ponds, covered with Ships and Boats, and abounding with all ſorts of Fiſh; its Plenty of Metals and Minerals; the ſtrength of its Situation, being ſo walled and guarded with the Ocean, ſo well furniſhed with excellent Shipping and Sailors, and ſo abounding with commodious Ports and Havens, that it is rightly termed *The Lady of the Sea*, we may well be permitted to affirm, that for neceſſary Food and Raiment, for pleaſant and wholſom Living, for Safety and Security, it is hardly to be equalled by any Kingdom in the World, and needs not fear the Force of any Neighboring Nation, but that, which overpowering us at Sea, ſhall thereby deprive us of our ſtrongeſt Bulwark, and of an Iſland make us a Continent. Not without reaſon therefore did an Antient Writer thus cry out: **Britain,**

Thou

Thou art a glorious Isle, extolled and renowned among all Nations; the Navies of Tharsis *cannot be compared with thy Shipping, bringing in all precious Commodities of the World: The Sea is thy Wall, and strong Fortifications do secure thy Ports: Chivalry, Clergy, and Merchandize do flourish in thee. The* Pisans, Genoveses, *and* Venetians *do bring thee Saphires and Carbuncles from the East:* Asia *serveth thee with Silk and Purple,* Africa *with Cinamon and Balm,* Spain *with Gold, and* Germany *with Silver: Thy Weaver* Flanders *doth drape Cloth for thee of thine own Wool; Thy* Gascoign *doth send thee Wine: Buck and Doe are plentiful in thy Forests: Droves of Cattle, and Flocks of Sheep are upon thy Hills: All the Perfection of the goodliest Land is in thee: Thou hast all the Fowl of the Air. In plenty of Fish thou dost surpass all Regions. And albeit thou art not stretched out with large Limits, yet bordering Nations, cloathed with thy Fleeces, do wonder at thee for thy blessed Plenty. Thy Swords have been turned into Plow-shares: Peace and Religion flourisheth in thee; so that thou art a Mirror to all* Christian *Kingdoms.*

Gascoign then under the Crown of *England.*

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Inhabitants: Of the Laws, Religion, Manners, and Puniſhments of the Antient Britains; *Of their Language, Stature, Diet, Attire, Recreation, Traffick, Shipping, Coins, and Buildings; Of their Arms and manner of Fighting: Of their Computation of Time.*

BRITAIN, being a Country, ſo rich in Commodities, ſo beautiful in ſituation, and ſo well ſtored with every thing, neceſſary for the ſupport of Human Life, that, if the World had been by its omnipotent Creator faſhioned like a Ring, as it is like a Globe, ſhe might well have been eſteemed the only Gemme therein: it is no wonder, that ſhe has been poſſeſt by many Nations, and coveted by many more; and that, whereas ſome Countries are ſtill held by their *Aborigines*, or the firſt, that laid claim to them, it ſhould be a matter of no ſmall difficulty to find out the firſt Inhabitants of this Iſland. Inhabitants.

The firſt Inhabitants of the Iſland, now

now called *Great Britain*, had their Original (as may be reaſonably conjectured from their calling themſelves *Kumero*, *Cymro*, and *Kumeri*, which Name was ſo ancient amongſt them, that *Cymro* and *Cymri* doth now ſignifie as much as *Aborigines*) from the *Cimbri* of the Continent, who are ſuppoſed to be the Relicks of the ancient *Cimmerii*, that, proceeding from *Scythia* into the Countries, afterwards called *Sarmatia* and *Germany*, and eſtabliſhing themſelves upon thẽ Sea-coaſts of *Gaul*, paſſed over into this Iſland likewiſe, and here ſeated themſelves. But in proceſs of time, and before the Dayes of *Cæſar*, the *Germans* Valor decreaſing, the *Gauls*, increaſing in Number and Power, recovered their antient Seats, and proceeded into *Britain* alſo, and invaded part of the *Cimbri*, who had long before placed themſelves in this Iſland; and altho they obtained the Sea-coaſts, and entred far into the Inland parts, and ſo by long poſſeſſion came to be called *Britains*, yet they were by the more antient Inhabitants, who eſteemed themſelves the only *Aborigines* of the Iſland, looked upon only as Incroachers. Soon

Soon after (if not contemporary with the *Cimbri*) are the *Phœnicians* ſuppoſed to have been in this Iſland, who, being in the firſt Ages of the World the beſt, if not only Navigators, paſſing through the *Straits* to diſcover the Weſtern Seas, firſt of all the Inhabitants of the *Mediterranean* found out theſe Iſlands, arriving firſt at the Iſles of *Scilly*, which finding to abound with Tynn, they called in their Language *Bratanac*, which the *Greeks* by a Word of like ſignification rendred *Caſſiterides*. The *Phœnicians*, afterwards diſcovering the Weſtern parts of this Iſland, now called *Cornwall* and *Devonſhire*, the ſame name was communicated thereunto, and by Degrees to all the Iſlands, ſituated in the Weſtern Ocean.

The Uſefulneſs of thoſe excellent Commodities, brought by the *Phœnicians* from *Britain*, rendred the *Greeks* very curious in ſearch of the Place, from whence they came, which the *Phœnicians* as ſtudiouſly concealed from them: Yet *Colæus* having diſcovered the Weſtern Seas, the *Greeks* found out theſe Iſlands, where they ſetled vaſt Colonies, landing firſt at *Man* and

and *Angleſey*, and introduced into the whole Iſland a great number of their Religious Ceremonies, and other Cuſtoms.

In the Year of the World 3913. *Julius Cæſar*, being offended with the *Britains* for having under-hand aſſiſted his Enemies the *Gauls*, invaded this Nation, but may be ſaid rather to have diſcovered it, than conquered it: from which he was ſo far, that *Lucan* ſayes poſitively of him,

Territa quæſitis oſtendit terga Britannis.

But afterwards in the Time of *Claudius* the Southern Parts of it were made a *Roman* Province.

The *Britains* being thus partly ſubdued by the *Romans*, ſome of them, impatient of ſubjection, ſheltring themſelves behind the *Cheviot* Hills, and Mount *Grampius*, infeſted the *Roman* Colonies, and retaining the ancient Cuſtom of painting themſelves, when the other *Britains*, now civilized, had left it off, were diſtinguiſhed by the Name of *Picts*, thoſe only being called *Britains*, who were under the *Romans* Juriſdiction. The *Picts* inhabited the more Southern Parts of ſo much of the Iſland, as was left unconquered

conquered by the *Romans*, the more Northern parts being long before poſſeſt by the *Scots*, who *Anno mundi* 3641. coming out of *Ireland*, ſeated themſelves there, and called it *Scotland*.

In the Decay of the *Roman* Empire the *Britains*, deſerted by the *Romans*, and weakned by the many Armies, they had drawn from them, and infeſted by the *Scots* and *Picts*, did in the Reign of King *Vortigern* call in the *Saxons* to their Aſſiſtance, who by degrees poſſeſt themſelves of all the flouriſhing parts of the Iſland, driving the *Britains* into the mountainous Parts of *Wales* and *Cornwal*.

Of the Laws, whereby the Antient *Britains* were governed, the moſt remarkable, that have come to our knowledg, are ſeven, ſaid to have been made by *Molmutius Dunwallo*, tranſlated out of the *Britiſh* ſpeech into the *Latin* by *Gildas*, and afterwards into the *Engliſh Saxon* by King *Alfred*. They are theſe that follow: Laws.

1. That the Temples of the Gods ſhould enjoy ſuch Priviledges, that whatever Malefactor ſhould fly thither

ther for Sanctuary, ſhould not be forced from thence, till he had obtained Pardon for his Crime.

2. That the Wayes, leading to the Temples, and the Roads of great Cities, ſhould have like Priviledges.

3. That Plows, Oxen, and other laboring Cattle ſhould enjoy the like Immunities, leſt, the Ground being untilled, the People might periſh for want of Bread.

4. That a certain number of Plows ſhould be uſed in every County of the Land, with ſevere Penalties to be inflicted upon thoſe, that ſhould leſſen the Number.

5. That no Oxen or laboring Beaſts ſhould be ſeized for Debt.

6. That Buying and Selling ſhould be by certain ſet Weights and Meaſures.

7. That Thieves and Robbers ſhould be ſeverely puniſhed.

Religion. The great Goodneſs and Wiſdom of GOD having created Man for the Enjoyment of himſelf, and all other things for the uſe and ſervice of Man in order to his attaining of this ſublime End, it is but juſt, that Man

Man ſhould pay a Soveraign Adoration and Reſpect to this bounteous Creator, and a punctual Obedience to all his Commands. The true Manner of performing this Adoration was by *Adam*, who received it of GOD himſelf, taught his Poſterity; but they deviating from his Precepts, and becoming guilty of all ſorts of Impieties, the Almighty ſent an univerſal Deluge, which waſht away all Mankind (eight Perſons only excepted) from off the Face of the Earth.

The Poſterity of *Noah*, who with his Wife, his three Sons, and their Wives, alone eſcaped this common Calamity, too ſoon forgetting the ſevere Puniſhment, inflicted upon the former Generation of Men for their Irreligion, left the Service of the true Deity, adoring the Inventions of their own Heads, and the Works of their own Hands: ſo that amongſt all the Inhabitants of the Earth there were antiently none but the *Jews*, who Worſhipt the true GOD in the true manner.

No wonder then, that the Religion of the antient *Britains* was *Paganiſh* Superſtition, they having many Idol-

Gods, the chief whereof were theſe, that follow.

1. **Taramis**, or the *Thunderer*, the ſame with *Jupiter*, to whom, as to many other of their Gods, they offered human Sacrifices.

2. **Tutates**, or *Mercury*, who was eſteemed the Inventor of all Arts and Sciences, and particularly of Letters, and the Sickle; as alſo the Leader in in all Journeys, and Guide in all Wayes; and whoſe Patronage was eſteemed to be of a wonderful Efficacy for promoting Gain in Mony, or any kind of Merchandize. To his Honour there were Mounts caſt up, and conſecrated, eſpecially where many Wayes met, and his Statue erected upon them, pointing to the Wayes.

3. **Heſus**, the ſame with *Mars*, the God of War and Peace, called alſo **Camulus**: from whom came *Camulodunum* or *Mars-Hill*, now **Maldon** in *Eſſex*. To him alſo were Men ſacrificed.

4. **Hues**, or *Bacchus*, whoſe Prieſts were called *Eubages*. Of the Feaſts of this God *Pliny* is ſuppoſed to ſpeak, where he ſaies, *That the* Britains *died themſelves like* Æthiopians

at

at ſome ſolemn Sacrifices, and performed their Worſhip with Men and Women going naked.

5. **Belenus**, who was the ſame with *Apollo*, repreſented by the *Britains* with an Harp. His Prieſts were called *Pateræ*.

6. **Beliſama**, or the Moon, *The Queen of Heaven*, viz. *Diana*, the Siſter of *Apollo*, called alſo **Arduena** and **Ardoena**, the Goddeſs of Woods and Mountains. She had ſomtime a Temple in *London*, where now ſtands the Cathedral of St. *Paul*.

7. **Dnbana**, or *Minerva*, to whoſe Honour there was a Temple erected, where is now the Cathedral of *Bath*.

8. **Adraſte**, or the Goddeſs of Victory, ſuppoſed to be the ſame with the *Venus armata* of the *Cytheræi* and *Lacedæmonians*, and the *Venus Victrix* of the *Romans*. In Temples, and in Groves, called by her Name the Groves of **Adraſte**, they ſacrificed to her Priſoners alive.

They are thought alſo to have worſhipped *Ceres* and *Proſerpina*, to whom and other Infernal Deities were performed Nocturnal Sacrifices, where

many abominable Luſts, and horrid Villanies were committed.

In theſe parts likewiſe was Worſhipped **Ogmius** or the *Phœnician Hercules*, who was repreſented an Old and decrepit Man, bald-pated, white-haired, wrincle-skinned, and Sun-burnt, having a Globe in one hand, and a pair of Compaſſes in the other.

Beſides theſe they had alſo for Gods *Portenta* (ſaith *Gildas*) *ipſa diabolica pæne numero* Ægyptiaca *vincentia* Many ugly Spectres, meerly Diabolical, exceeding in number even thoſe of *Ægypt*. Some of which Repreſentations were remaining even to his dayes in the Ruines of their Cities, having deformed Lineaments, and ſtern and grim Countenances.

For the performance of their Sacrifices, and other Superſtitious Ceremonies of their Idolatrous Religion, they had many Prieſts and Inſtructers, the chief whereof were the **Bards** and the **Druids**. The **Bards**, who are juſtly eſteemed the moſt ancient Order in *Britain*, and were long before the **Druids**, being ſuppoſed to have their Original from the *Phœnicians*, were made uſe of in the Deifying

ing of Great Men, compoſing in Verſe the Praiſes of the Gods and Heroes, and the whole Body of their Divinity: till that, the **Druids**, who were brought in by the *Greeks*, geting the upper hand, they degenerated by degrees into common Ballad-ſingers, and thoſe, that before ſang of the Immortality and Eſſence of the Soul, the Praiſes of the Gods, and the *Encomiums* and Vertues of Great Men, gave themſelves up now to the compoſing of Myſtical Rimes, Charms, Spels, and Incantations: to which, as the *Britains* of old, ſo the *Welſh* are even at this day prodigiouſly addicted.

The **Druids**, ſucceeding, did not totally aboliſh the Cuſtoms and Opinions of the **Bards**, but retained the moſt uſeful of them, particularly the Doctrine of the Immortality of the Soul, to which they added that of its Tranſmigration, firſt taught by *Pythagoras*, about whoſe Time, or not long after, the *Greeks* are ſuppoſed to have entred this Iſland. Theſe grew ſo powerful, that they not only became the ſole Interpreters of Religion, neceſſarily preſent in the exerciſe there-

of, without whom neither publick nor private Sacrifices could be performed; but were made Judges also of all Controverſies and Crimes, and abſolute Determiners of all Diſputes about Inheritances and Bounds of Lands, iſſuing out their Excommunications for Non-performance of their Decrees even upon the Temporal Magiſtrates themſelves, and making themſelves feared by having it in their power to determin, whoſe Blood would be the moſt acceptable Sacrifice to the Gods. No wonder therefore, that they were exempted from War, and Taxes, and enjoyed many other great Priviledges and Immunities.

Their Juriſdiction extended over the whole Iſland and ſome part of *Gallia*, and they were ſubject to two Primates: one of which, under whom were the Northern *Druids*, had his Reſidence in the Iſle of *Man*; the other, under whom were the Southern, in *Angleſey*. Yet *Cæſar* writes, that they were ſubject but to one Chief, who was conſtituted by Election. This being a Place of Great Repute, there were in its vacancy many Competitors, inſomuch that the Secular Power was ſome-

ſometimes engaged in the Quarrel, each Prince endeavouring to ſtrengthen his Authority by advancing a Favourite of his own to that Seat. They had once a year a ſolemn Meeting at *Chartres* in *France*, but their chief Reſidences were in the Iſles of *Man* and *Angleſey*, whither reſorted both from *Britain* and *Gaul* thoſe, who deſired to be initiated in their Ceremonies, where they continued ſometimes near twenty years to be inſtructed in the Myſteries of their Religion, which they were not permitted to carry away any otherwiſe, than in their Memories. When *Britain* was invaded by the *Romans*, the the Southern *Druids* retired to *Angleſey*, and the Northern to *Man*: at length thoſe of *Angleſey*, being driven out of their Seat, repaired likewiſe to *Man*, where they continued till ſuch time, as King *Cratilinth Anno Domini* 277. with great difficulty expelled them.

They taught among other things, that the Life of a Man, either in a deſperate Sickneſs, or in the Perils of War, could not be ſecured, unleſs another ſuffered in his ſtead:

wherefore in ſuch Caſes they either ſacrificed Men, or vowed ſo do after their delivery. The moſt acceptable Sacrifice to their Gods were eſteemed Murtherers, Robbers, and ſuch like Criminals, but where thoſe were wanting, Innocents often ſuffered. They made in ſome places the Image or Statue of a Man, the Limbs whereof were made of Oſier Twigs, woven together like Basket-ware: this they filled with live Men, and ſetting it on fire, cauſed the poor Creatures to periſh in the Flames and Smoak.

The firſt Occaſion of erecting theſe Wicker Images is ſuppoſed to have been in Deteſtation of the Slavery, they ſuffered under the *Phœnicians*, who, being Men of a vaſt and exceeding Stature, had for a long time ſubdued, and kept them under, and were (no doubt) thoſe Giants, whom the *Britiſh* Hiſtories ſay to have ſo long infeſted the Land. The Tradition of whoſe being in *Cornwall* was preſerved to the dayes of *Havillan* the Poet, who lived about four hundred years ſince. Whoſe Verſes concerning *Cornwall* are theſe.

——*Ti-*

——————————Titanibus *illa*
Sed paucis famuloſa Domus, quibus uda Ferarum
Terga dabant Veſtes, Cruor Hauſtus, Pocula Trunci,
Antra Lares, Dumeta Thoros, Cænacula Rupes,
Præda Cibos, Raptus Venerem, *Spectacula Cædes,*
Imperium Vires, Animos Furor, Impetus Arma,
Mortem Pugna, Sepulchra Rubus: Monſtrisque gemebat
Monticolis tellus: ſed eorum plurima Tractûs
Pars erat occidui, Terror, majorque premebat
Te Furor, extremum Zephyri, Cornubia, *Limen.*

——————————Here lodgd of Old
A Race of Titans, impious and bold:
Their Bodies with raw Hides they clad, allaid
With Blood their Thirſt, of hollow Trees they made
Their Cups, their Beds were Moſſe Bushes, Dens
Their Houſes were, their Chambers craggy Pens:
Their Hunger Prey, Rape did their Luſt ſupply:

The Sport of slaughtring men did
please their Eye:
Force gat them Rule, Fury them
Courage gave,
Rage Arms, a Battle Death, a Grove
a Grave:
These Monsters dwelt on Hills, and
did molest
Each Quarter of the Land, but
most the West,
Thou, Frighted Cornwall, never hav-
ing Rest.

The *Druids* officiated only in Groves of Oak, planting for that purpose very many up and down the whole Island: for they highly venerated this Tree, and more especially the Misletoe growing thereon, without a Branch whereof they performed no Sacrifice, and which, being found on a Tree, was esteemed a sure Sign, that the GOD, whom they were then about to serve, had made choise of it. This was by them gathered with many Superstitious Ceremonies and great Devotion. 1. They observed, that at the time of gathering it the Moon was to be neither more nor less than six dayes old. 2. Having prepared their Sacrifices under the Tree, they

they brought thither two young Bullocks milk-white, whoſe Horns were then, and not before, bound up. 3. The Prieſt, cloathed in white, climbed the Tree, and with a golden Bill cut down the Miſſletoe, which was received below in a Souldiers white Caſſock. 4. They bleſſed the Gift, mumbling over many Oriſons. The Miſſletoe, thus gathered, was reputed a Soveraign Antidote againſt Poyſon and Barrenneſs.

Cæſar, at his coming into *Britain*, found it Inhabited by two ſorts of People: The more inland parts by ſuch, as eſteemed themſelves Αὐτόχθονες, or to have had their Original out of the very Soil, they lived in, *quos natos in Inſula ipſa memoria proditum dicunt*, as he has it; The Maritime parts being poſſeſt by ſuch, as reſorted thither from *Gaul* and *Belgium*, for the ſake either of Traffick or Conqueſt. The want of obſerving this Diſtinction is the Cauſe of the ſeeming Contradictions, that are found in ſuch Writers, as diſcourſe of the Manners and Cuſtoms of the ancient *Britains*. Manners.

Thoſe

Thoſe on the Sea-coaſts were more civilized, had Houſes, Orchards, Gardens, tilled and manured their Grounds, and agreed very much in manners with the *Gauls*; but the Inlanders for want of Converſe, and living in a perpetual State of War, were more rude and barbarous, ſymbolizing with the *Germans*, from whom they are thought to have had their Original.

The *Britains* are generally repreſented by moſt Authors to be of a kind and gentle Diſpoſition, not having the Craft and Subtilty of other Nations, but a fair-conditioned People, of a plain and upright Dealing.

That they were valorous, none can doubt, who conſiders, with what difficulty, notwithſtanding the many Diviſions and Quarrels amongſt their own petty Princes, they were ſubjected to the *Romans*; how ſerviceable they were to them afterwards in their Wars; how vigorouſly, tho then very few, their Land having been diſpeopled by the *Romans*, they withſtood the numerous Forces of the *Saxons*, whom their own Invitation firſt

firſt gave footing amongſt them; and, when over-powered by them, they were forced to retire into the more *Weſtern* Parts of this Iſland, how ſtoutly they maintained their Liberties againſt the *Engliſh* Kings both of the *Saxon* and *Norman* Race; and how by a voluntary Submiſſion, rather than Force, they were brought under Subjection to the Crown of *England*: Since which time they have been outgone by none in Loyalty and Fidelity to their Prince.

The Inlanders had all things amongſt them in common, and would not admit of any Propriety, inſomuch that ten or twelve of them promiſcuouſly made uſe of the ſame Women, Brethren with Brethren, and Parents with their own Children, the Iſſue, which was bred up by a common Stock, being more particularly reputed his, who had the firſt Enjoyment of the Mothers Virgin Embraces.

They inured themſelves to all Hardſhip, being able to undergo any Cold, Hunger, and Labor whatever: ſo that they would ſtick themſelves in Boggs up to their very Heads, continuing there many dayes together with-

without any Suſtenance.

The *Britains* were generally very much addicted to Magick, as are their Deſcendents the *Welſh* even to this very day.

Puniſhments. It was the Cuſtom of the antient *Britains*, that, when any great man died, his Relations made Enquiry (if there were Suſpicion) amongſt his Wives concerning his Death, who, if they were found guilty, were puniſhed with Fire and other Torments: From whence Sir *Edward Cook* derives the Law of *England* at this day for burning thoſe Women, who kill their Husbands.

Thieves and Murderers were reſerved by them to be offered in Sacrifice to the Gods: and ſo were Captives, taken in their Wars.

The greateſt Puniſhment, not capital, amongſt them was Excommunication, which was iſſued out by the *Druids* not only againſt private, but alſo againſt publick perſons. Thoſe, upon whom this Cenſure was inflicted, were accounted impious and profane, uncapable of any Honorable Office, and excluded the Benefit of the Law, none

none daring to approach them, or converſe in talk with them, tho at a diſtance, for fear of being infected by them.

The old Language of the *Britains*, who have been above all other Nations curious to preſerve it entire without any mixture, was the ſame (ſetting aſide ſome ſmall Variations) that is ſpoken at this day not only by the *Britains* of *England*, but alſo by thoſe of *Armorica* in *France*. Which altho it has in it many *Phœnician*, and more *Greek* Words, yet the Idiom of it, as to the main, appears to be *Teutonick*, and the Words, which they received either by Trading with the former Nations, or the Invaſion of the *Gauls*, ſeem much to be modelled to that Dialect. Language.

Beſides this generall Language of the Country, the *Greek*, or at leaſt a Dialect thereof, was preſerved entire amongſt the *Druids*, who not only therein concealed the Myſteries of their Religion, which they committed not to Writing, but delivered down by a Traditionary Conveyance to thoſe only, who admitted themſelves

ſelves of that Order, and underwent the Severities of a long and tedious Diſcipline: But their Records alſo were preſerved in the *Greek* Tongue and Characters, which, unintelligible by the Vulgar, none could have Recourſe unto, but Perſons of Repute and Learning: Nor were they permitted to take any thing away in Writing, but by Memory only, the Truſt of keeping theſe things being repoſed in ſome perſons, who for their ſingular Fidelity, Integrity, and Learning were choſen for that purpoſe.

Stature. The antient *Britains* were of Stature taller than the *Gauls* (whoſe Expreſſion concerning them to *Cæſar* was, that other Nations ſeemed as Nothing in their Eyes) their Hair not ſo yellow, nor their Bodies ſo compact, knit, and firm, having but bad Feet to ſupport them; but the other Lineaments of their Body were well made, and their Features excellent. The Goodneſs of their Conſtitution was ſuch, that they are ſaid to have lived to the Age of an hundred and twenty

twenty Years. *Strabo* ſaies, that he ſaw very Youths amongſt them taller by half a foot than the talleſt men. Nor were the Women leſs remarkable for Beauty, than the Men for Stature. Yet were not the Complexions of the People every where the ſame: the *North Britains* being fair, having large Limbs, and long yellow Hair, as the *Germans*; the *South Britains* ſwarthy, and having curled Hair like the *Spaniards*; the Coaſt, lying upon *France*, agreeing in Language, Cuſtoms, and every thing with the *Gauls*.

They were ſo exceeding ſwift of Foot, that, laying their Hands on the Manes of their Horſes, they could equal them in their Race.

Their Diet was ſimple, not dainty; and that of the inland *Britains* very ſpare and mean: for living continually in War, and frequently ſhifting the Places of their Abode, not much unlike the *Coſſacks* in the *Ukraine*, they tilled not any Ground, kept no Sheep, nor made any Cheeſe; but ſatisfied their Hunger with any ſort of Prey, as Veniſon, Natural Fruits, and Milk, and many times with Roots and Barks of Diet.

of Trees. They eſteemed it unlawful to eat either Hare, Hen, or Gooſe. The Sea-coaſt or *Gauliſh Britains* had Gardens and Orchards, manured their Grounds with Marl, howed their Corn, and brought it in by Sheaves; but never threſhed more than for preſent uſe only. Theſe were daintier in their Diet than the former, having particular Diſhes in great Requeſt, the moſt delicate whereof was the *Chenerotes*, a Fowl ſomwhat leſs than Wild-Geeſe. The *Britains* had alſo a kind of Food, of which eating but the Quantity of a Bean, they did for a conſiderable time after neither hunger nor thirſt. Their uſual drink was made of Barley, a thing in former Ages unknown to any Nation of *Europe*, the *Britains* only excepted: to whom this Cuſtom is (not improbably) conjectured to have been brought by the *Phœnicians* from *Ægypt*.

Attire. Man, being created in a State of perfect Integrity, had before his fall no other Cloathing, but his own Innocency. But no ſooner had he tranſgreſſed the Command of GOD by eating the for-

forbidden Fruit, but being diveſted of that Robe of Purity, wherewith he was clad in his Creation, he grew aſhamed likewiſe of his external Nakedneſs, which he ſought to cover with Figleaves. Soon after he received from GOD himſelf a Coat of Skins, and this was the firſt Original of Apparel, which Pride, playing upon conceited Opinions of Decency, has ſince infinitely varied in matter, form, and faſhion, ſtill continuing to do the ſame.

Of the Old *Britains*, the Inlanders were for the moſt part cloathed with Skins, ſome few only going naked. The Sea-coaſt or *Gauliſh Britains* had the ſame ſort of Habits, as the *Gauls*: The moſt remarkable whereof were *Gaunacum*, whence our Word **Gown**, which was a thick Covering, made of courſe Wool, having a Nap on both ſides like Freez, worn by the *Gauls* and better ſort of *Britains* to keep out the Cold; and *Bardiacus*, a Garment of divers Colours woven together, the gaudy Shew whereof was no doubt very pleaſing in the eyes of the *Britains*; to which may be added *Brachæ*, a Garment common both to the

the *Gauls* and *Britains*, deſcending below, and covering the knees: of which *Martial* ſaith,

Quam veteres Bracha Britonis *pauperis.*——

The Hair of their Heads, and upper Lips they wore long, but ſhaved it off in all other parts.

In *Cæſars* Dayes the *Britains* painted their Faces, Hands, and ſuch other parts of their Bodies, as were commonly expoſed to ſight, with Woad, that they might appear more terrible in Battel. But in after Ages amongſt thoſe *Britains*, who, being by the *Romans* driven out of their poſſeſſions, betook themſelves both Men and Women to their Arms, and were reduced to a Savage Life, this uſe of Painting, practiced before only in Time of War, and that by none but men, grew into ſuch Requeſt, partly, becauſe it was (as they fancied) terrible to their Enemies, and partly, becauſe wanting Cloaths, they had no other diſtinction of their Dignities, that the Women, as well as the Men, painted all their Bodies with terrible Creatures, and becauſe by their being expoſed naked in the Fields, and often

ten ſubject to wet weather, their Painting was apt to waſh off, they made Inciſions into their Fleſh, whereby to keep it in. From hence in proceſs of time, theſe painted *Britains* were called *Picts*.

About the ſame Time alſo, as it is not improbably conjectured, was the Cuſtom taken up of wearing Iron Rings about their Necks and Bellies, which being firſt begun by a neceſſity of Carriage, was afterward eſteemed an Ornament.

Recreation. The chiefeſt Recreation of the *Britains*, whoſe Habitations were moſt in the Woods, was Hunting, they having excellent Dogs for that purpoſe: inſomuch that *Strabo* witneſſeth, that the Dogs, called *Agaſæi*, ſo much eſteemed by the *Greeks*, were of *Britiſh* Race, which Dogs are by us to this day called **Gaſe-hounds**.

Traffick. The Trading of the antient *Britains*, tho not to be compared with that of After-times, was not yet ſo inconſiderable, as they would perſwade us, who affirm, that it conſiſted chiefly in Ivory Boxes, Sheers, On-

Onches, Bits and Bridles, Wreaths and Chains, with other Conceits made of Glaſs and Amber: For *Strabo*, relating their Traffick, ſayes, that, in exchange for Tynne and Lead, Skins and Furrs, they received Earthen Veſſels, Salt and Brazen Ware of the *Phœnicians*, who were the firſt, that traded hither, and ſo induſtriouſly concealed this Navigation from others, that a certain Maſter of a Ship, being jealous of a *Roman* Veſſel, that followed him, for to learn this Traffick, purpoſely ran his Ship upon the Sands, and having brought thoſe, by whom he was followed, into the ſame Deſtruction, himſelf eſcaped Shipwrack, and received Satisfaction for his Loſſes out of the publick Treaſury.

Shipping. Their Shipping indeed was very mean: for they had only certain little Skiffs, the Keels and Footſtocks whereof were made of ſlight Timber, but the Bodies were wound and wrought with Oſiers, and covered with Leather.

Money. For the better ſupply of the mutual

al Neceſſities of Mankind, People at firſt bartered or exchanged (according as occaſions required) one Commodity for another; but that being found troubleſom, ſome one or other Commodity was every where found out to be the Standard of Commerce and Traffick. This amongſt all civilized Nations terminated in Gold and Silver, which, as moſt beautiful, pliable, portable, and leaſt Subject to ruſt, were (even in the Dayes of *Abraham*) choſen to be the Inſtruments of Exchange, and the Meaſure of all other things, and were at firſt paid only by weight, till the *Romans* about three hundred years before CHRIST firſt invented the Art of Coyning.

Yet have not theſe two Metals ſo far prevailed, but that other matter hath been, and in divers places ſtill is uſed for Money. The antient *Britains* particularly inſtead of Money made uſe of Iron Rings, ſized at a certain Weight, and beſides theſe of brazen Pieces, ſome of which had a figure of a Shield emboſt, and on that ſide a certain Image, the Device being within: which kind of Coin was in uſe in no other part of the

the World, except in ſome places, belonging to *Greece*.

Buildings. The Buildings of the Sea-coaſt *Britains* were many, and like to thoſe of the old *Gauls*: The Inlanders had no Houſes, but certain cumberſome Woods ſtood them inſtead of Cities and Towns: for when they had by felling of Trees encompaſt a ſpacious round plat of Ground, and fortified it with Rampires and Ditches, they built there for themſelves Huts and Cottages, and for their Cattel ſet up Stalls and Folds, making thither their Retreat and Reſort, to eſchew the Invaſions of their Enemies.

Arms. The *Britains*, (being as we have obſerved) a People very ſwift of foot, never burdened themſelves with any Armor, which they could not at their pleaſure fling off. Their Defenſive Arms were only Shields; for Offenſive Weapons they had ſhort Spears, at the lower end of which was faſtned a round Bell of Braſs, which at the beginning of a fight they ſhook with a great Courage, conceiting, that ſuch a ratling Noiſe did diſmay the Enemy. They had alſo Daggers, and Swords,

Swords, which thoſe, who went naked, girt about their Bodies with Iron Chains.

The different Intereſts of the many petty Princes, amongſt whom this Iſland was divided, keeping them in continual Wars, the *Britains* muſt of neceſſity be well-experienced Souldiers: But their Manner of fighting was ſo peculiar to themſelves, that *Cæſar* related it for a Wonder in the *Weſtern* Parts. They fought in a Body, called *Caterva*, or **Caturſa**, as the *Romans* had their *Legion*, and the *Macedonians* their *Phalanx*. Manner of Fighting.

Their uſual manner of fighting was in Chariots, of which they had ſeveral ſorts, the moſt remarkable whereof were the *Covinus* and the *Eſſedum*.

The *Covinus* was a ſort of Chariot, carrying no men at all, but only him, that guided it. It was exceedingly well harnaſſed and armed, having at both Ends of the Axletrees Hooks and and Scyths faſtned, ſo that driving furiouſly into the Enemies Battel, they made whole Lanes of ſlaughtered men, the Scyths cutting off thoſe in the

middle, who did not ſpeedily make way, and the Hooks catching up thoſe, that had eſcaped the Scyths.

The *Eſſedum* carried many perſons, who, as the Charioteer rode through all the parts of the Battle, beſtowed their Darts, which, with the terrible appearance of the Horſes, and the ratling Noiſe of the Wheels, uſually brake the Ranks of their Enemies. When they had wound themſelves in amongſt their Enemies, they leapt out of their Chariots, and fought on foot, the Charioteers in the mean time driving out of the Battle, and drawing up their Chariots, whither they retired, when over-powered by the Enemy. In the managing their Chariot-Horſes daily Practice had rendred them ſo expert, that driving forcibly down a ſteep Hill, they could ſtop, and turn ſhort in the midſt of their Career, run upon the Beam, ſtand upon the Harneſs, and skip preſently back into their Chariots.

The Horſes, uſed by the *Britains* in their Chariots, were ſmall and ſwift: their Harneſs was not only ſubſtantial, but alſo curiouſly wrought & engraven, as may be gathered from theſe Words

Eſſeda cælatis ſiſte Britanna *jugis.*

The *Britains* began their day at Sun-ſet, which Cuſtom they are ſuppoſed to have learnt from the *Phænicians*, who, as all other *Eaſtern* Nations, uſed the ſame manner of Computation, which they received from the *Jews*, who were taught by *Moſes*, that *the Evening and the Morning were the firſt Day.* Thus, what the *Romans* called *Septimana*, is in the *Britiſh* Tongue to this day called **Wythnos**, and in *Engliſh* a **Sennight**, the Abbreviation of *Seven Nights.* Computation of Time.

From the ſame Original alſo was their Obſervation of the New Moon, in whoſe firſt Quarter they began not only their Months, and New Years, but their ſeveral Ages likewiſe, which were comprehended in a Cycle of thirty Years.

CHAP. IV.

Of Government: of Monarchy, its Original, and Excellency: Britain *alwayes governed by Monarchs.*

Government. OF Government there neither are, nor can be more than three Species: For the Soveraign Command of a State muſt either reſide in one, which is *Monarchy*; or in ſome principal perſons, which is *Ariſtocracy*; or in the whole Body of the People, which is *Democracy*.

Monarchy. Of theſe the beſt and only perfect (not to ſay, only lawful) kind of Government is the *Monarchical*, not only as having the neareſt Reſemblance of the Divinity, but as being the firſt, and only Natural Government of Mankind, and under which the Subject has ever found the greateſt Happineſs, and ſuffered the feweſt Inconveniences.

Original. The Original and firſt Inſtitution of this moſt excellent Government was from GOD himſelf; who, having cre-

created *Adam*, commanded him *to multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it, and to have Dominion over all Creatures*, constituting him thereby Monarch of the Universe.

The Posterity of *Adam* had no Right to possess any thing, but by Grant or Permission from him, or Succession to him, who, when his Children grew up, and came to have Children of their own, over whom they also had a Command and Power, assigned them their distinct Territories by Right of private Dominion, yet still with Subordination to himself, who was Lord-paramount over his Childrens Children to all Generations. Absurd therefore is the Fancy of those, who imagin an independent Multitude, having a natural Right to Community: A thing, which never had any Being, but in the *Chimerical* Brains of the Assertors. An Opinion this is, which cannot be maintained without the great Scandal of *Christianity*, and opening a Door to *Atheisme* by denying the Creation of *Adam*.

Adam then was Father, King, and Lord over his Family; a Son, a Sub-

middle, who did not ſpeedily make way, and the Hooks catching up thoſe, that had eſcaped the Scyths.

The *Eſſedum* carried many perſons, who, as the Charioteer rode through all the parts of the Battle, beſtowed their Darts, which, with the terrible appearance of the Horſes, and the ratling Noiſe of the Wheels, uſually brake the Ranks of their Enemies. When they had wound themſelves in amongſt their Enemies, they leapt out of their Chariots, and fought on foot, the Charioteers in the mean time driving out of the Battle, and drawing up their Chariots, whither they retired, when over-powered by the Enemy. In the managing their Chariot-Horſes daily Practice had rendred them ſo expert, that driving forcibly down a ſteep Hill, they could ſtop, and turn ſhort in the midſt of their Career, run upon the Beam, ſtand upon the Harneſs, and skip preſently back into their Chariots.

The Horſes, uſed by the *Britains* in their Chariots, were ſmall and ſwift: their Harneſs was not only ſubſtantial, but alſo curiouſly wrought & engraven, as may be gathered from theſe Words

of *Propertius*, *Eſſeda*

Eſſeda cælatis ſiſte Britanna *jugis.*

The *Britains* began their day at Sun-ſet, which Cuſtom they are ſuppoſed to have learnt from the *Phœnicians*, who, as all other *Eaſtern* Nations, uſed the ſame manner of Computation, which they received from the *Jews*, who were taught by *Moſes*, that *the Evening and the Morning were the firſt Day.* Thus, what the *Romans* called *Septimana*, is in the *Britiſh* Tongue to this day called **With-nos**, and in *Engliſh* a **Sennight**, the Abbreviation of *Seven Nights.* Computation of Time.

From the ſame Original alſo was their Obſervation of the New Moon, in whoſe firſt Quarter they began not only their Months, and New Years, but their ſeveral Ages likewiſe, which were comprehended in a Cycle of thirty Years.

CHAP. IV.

Of Government: of Monarchy, its Original, and Excellency: Britain *always governed by Monarchs.*

Government. OF Government there neither are, nor can be more than three Species: For the Soveraign Command of a State muſt either reſide in one, which is *Monarchy*; or in ſome principal perſons, which is *Ariſtocracy*; or in the whole Body of the People, which is *Democracy.*

Monarchy. Of theſe the beſt and only perfect (not to ſay, only lawful) kind of Government is the *Monarchical*, not only as having the neareſt Reſemblance of the Divinity, but as being the firſt, and only Natural Government of Mankind, and under which the Subject has ever found the greateſt Happineſs, and ſuffered the feweſt Inconveniences.

Original. The Original and firſt Inſtitution of this moſt excellent Government was from GOD himſelf; who, having cre-

created *Adam*, commanded him *to multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it, and to have Dominion over all Creatures*, conſtituting him thereby Monarch of the Univerſe.

The Poſterity of *Adam* had no Right to poſſeſs any thing, but by Grant or Permiſſion from him, or Succeſſion to him, who, when his Children grew up, and came to have Children of their own, over whom they alſo had a Command and Power, aſſigned them their diſtinct Territories by Right of private Dominion, yet ſtill with Subordination to himſelf, who was Lord-paramount over his Childrens Children to all Generations. Abſurd therefore is the Fancy of thoſe, who imagin an independent Multitude, having a natural Right to Community: A thing, which never had any Being, but in the *Chimærical* Brains of the Aſſertors. An Opinion this is, which cannot be maintained without the great Scandal of *Chriſtianity*, and opening a Door to *Atheiſme* by denying the Creation of *Adam*.

Adam then was Father, King, and Lord over his Family; a Son, a Sub-

ject, a Servant, a Slave, were then one and the ſame thing. Nor was he tied to govern by any Laws, but that, which was by his Creator implanted in his Breaſt, called therefore the Law of Nature, which if he tranſgreſſed, he (as all ſucceeding Monarchs) was accountable to GOD alone, from whom he received it.

From *Adam* this Right of Soveraignty was to deſcend to his eldeſt Son, to whom GOD himſelf (even in his Fathers Life-time) ſpeaking of his younger Brother, ſaid: *Unto thee ſhall his Deſires be ſubject, and thou ſhalt rule over him.*

This was the Foundation of Government before the Univerſal Deluge: which (waſhing away all the reſt of Mankind from the face of the Earth) left this Univerſal Soveraignty to *Noah*, who with his Wife, his Sons, and their Wives, only remained alive. By *Noah* was the whole World divided amongſt his three Sons: From one of which, their Sons, or Nephews, ſcattered abroad after the Confuſion of *Babel*, do moſt of the civileſt Nations of the Earth labour to deduce their Original. The

The Posterity of *Noah*, to secure themselves (as they thought) from being destroyed by another Flood, went about to erect a Tower, the Top whereof, they intended, should reach up to Heaven. But to shew, how vain all humane Designments are, which think to contest with the Dispensations of Divine Providence, the Almighty sent amongst them a Confusion of Tongues, and dispersed those, who were congregated into one place, over the Face of the whole Earth.

By this Dispersion there were (according to the generally-received Opinion) seventy two distinct Nations erected, all which were not confused Multitudes, left at Liberty to choose what Governors or Government they listed; but so careful was GOD even in that Confusion to preserve the Paternal and *Monarchical* Authority, that he distributed the Diversity of Languages according to the Diversity of Families, having Fathers for Rulers over them. This appears plainly in the sacred Text, where, after the Enumeration of the Sons and Grandsons of *Japheth*, immediately follow

theſe Words: *By theſe were the Iſles of the Gentiles divided in their Lands: every one after his Tongue, after their Families, in their Nations.* So again of the Children of *Ham* it is ſaid: *Theſe are the Sons of* Ham, *after their Families, after their Tongues, in their Countreys, and in their Nations.* And again of the Children of *Shem*: *Theſe are the Sons of* Shem, *after their Families, after their Tongues, in their Lands, after their Nations.* The Concluſion of the whole being thus: *Theſe are the Families of the Sons of* Noah, *after their Generations, in their Nations: and by theſe were the Nations divided in the Earth, after the Flood.*

However therefore the Manner, uſed by *Noah* in the Diſtribution of the Earth amongſt his Poſterity, be uncertain; yet moſt certain it is, that the Diviſion it ſelf was by Families from *Noah* and his Children, over which the Fathers were Rulers, enjoying as abſolute an Authority and Dominion, as ever any Monarch ſince the Creation pretended to.

Agreeably to this Account of the Original of Monarchy, delivered in in holy Scripture, doth *Plato* in his third

third Book of Laws affirm, that *the true and first Reason of Authority is, that the Father and Mother, and simply those, that beget and ingender, do command and rule over all their Children.*

Groundless therefore is that Distinction, which some men make of *Monarchy* into *Despotical* and *Paternal*: since no Master has Right to exact a more absolute and unlimited Obedience from his Slave, than is due from the Child to the Father.

Of the Absoluteness of this Paternal Jurisdiction Examples are frequent in Holy Writ. Thus we find, that *Abraham* commanded an Army of three hundred and eighteen Souldiers of his own Family; and that *Esau* met his Brother *Jacob* with four hundred Men at Arms. Thus *Abraham* concluded a Peace with *Abimelech*, and ratified the Articles by Oath. Thus *Judah* sentenced *Thamar*, his Daughter-in-Law, to be burnt for playing the Harlot. Which three Acts of making War, concluding Peace, and giving Judgment of Life or Death, are the chief marks of Soveraignty, that can be found in any *Monarch*.

As the Original therefore of *Monarchy* was of Divine Inſtitution: ſo its Power was uncontrollable; nor can it be otherwiſe without the Deſtruction of the Government it ſelf. Rightly then (whatever *Milton* in his Juſtification of the blackeſt Treaſon, that ever Eye beheld, ſayes to the contrary) is a King defined by *Salmaſius He, who has the Supreme Power in the Kingdom, accountable to none but GOD, who may do, what he pleaſes, and is free from the Laws.*

Ridiculous then (if not Malicious) are the clamors of thoſe, who daily fill the World with Outcries againſt Arbitrary Power: For there never was, nor ever can be any People governed without a Power of Legiſlation, which Power muſt of neceſſity be Arbitrary, and is an inſeparable Concomitant of the Supreme Governor or Governors, and muſt therefore in a Monarchy reſide in one.

The Queſtion then is not, whether there ſhall be an Arbitrary Power, without which not any Government can one Moment ſubſiſt; but who ſhall have this Arbitrary Power, whether one man, or many: that is

in

in effect, whether the Government ſhall be *Monarchical*, or not?

Nay it has been ſeen, that thoſe very Perſons, who clamored ſo much (and with ſo little reaſon) againſt an Arbitrary Power in their Prince, have themſelves exerciſed the Height of Arbitrary Power over their fellow Subjects, puniſhing them by Impriſonment, and other Penalties, not for the Breach of any known and certain Laws; but of unknown and uncertain Priviledges: and aſcending to that Exceſs of Inſolence, as (even againſt all Law, Reaſon, and Equity) to declare it Criminal for any one to lend Money to his King.

It is an antient Tradition, which has every where obtained Reputation, that *Noah*, as Lord of all, was Author of the Diſtribution of the World, and of private Dominion, and that by the appointment of GOD himſelf he confirmed this Diſtribution by his laſt Will and Teſtament, left at his Death in the Hands of his Eldeſt Son *Shem*, by which he warned all his Sons, that none of them ſhould invade any of their Brothers Dominions, becauſe Diſcord and Civil War, would thence neceſſarily follow. Thus

Thus we find, that in all Nations the Princes were at firſt Lords of the whole Lands, as well as of the whole Inhabitants, amongſt whom they divided ſuch part thereof, to be held by ſuch Tenures and Services, as they judged moſt convenient. Inſtead then of Empires being founded in Property (as ſome men love to ſpeak) the Natural dominion of the Prince was the Original of all Propriety.

Monarchs at firſt governed by no ſtated Rule or Law, but by immediate Edicts or commands of their own Wills, as they in their own Judgments thought fit. But when Kings came to be ſo buſied with Wars, and diſtracted with publick Cares, that private perſons could not have acceſs to them, to learn their Pleaſure upon every occaſion, then did they both for the Eaſe of themſelves, and their people, ſet down Laws, by which they would ordinarily govern, reſerving to themſelves nevertheleſs Liberty to vary from them, as oft as they in their Diſcretion ſhould think fit. Afterwards Princes graciouſly condeſcended to call to their Councels ſeveral of the Chief men of their Kingdoms,

doms, and in time to admit likewiſe of Deputies from their People, without whoſe Advice and Conſent they would neither make new, nor abrogate old Laws. Thus all thoſe Rights and Priviledges, which licentious people make their pretence of conteſting with their Soveraigns, had no other Original but the Gracious Conceſſions of Princes, which tho they are ſo far bound to keep, as that, when in a ſetled Kingdom the Prince leaves to govern according to Law, he is guilty of very great Injuſtice; yet where he ſees the Laws rigorous or doubtful, he may (to the Peoples great Happineſs, leſt otherwiſe *Summum jus* ſhould prove *Summa injuria*) mitigate and interpret them. And whenever any powerful Faction ſhall, by making ill uſe of the Grace and Bounty of the Prince, endanger the Subverſion of his Government, the Safety of the People, whom GOD has committed to his Care, being the Law-paramount over all others, obliges him to make uſe of that Arbitrary Power, whereof (tho in the exerciſe of it he may reſtrain himſelf, yet) he can never be diveſted, to ſecure him-

himſelf and people from the Contrivances of malicious and ill-deſigning Perſons.

Thoſe therefore, that argue for Limited or Mixed *Monarchies*, do in effect only plead for Anarchy and Confuſion. For either theſe Limits muſt be ſuch Laws and Bounds, as the *Monarch* has ſet himſelf to Govern by, to the Obſervance whereof tho he may by Promiſe ſo far engage himſelf, that he cannot (as has been ſaid) ordinarily tranſgreſs them without the Sin of Injuſtice; yet this Promiſe of his, which is but an After-act of Grace, not diſſolving that abſolute Subjection, which preceded it, his Power (if he will ſinfully put it forth to act) is no leſs Arbitrary, than it was before the making of the Promiſe.

Or if you will imagin theſe Bounds of the *Monarchs* Power to be *ab externo*, and not from the free Determination of his own Will, then (the Subject, as they ſay, not being legally bound to ſubjection, in caſe the Prince commands beyond the Law) if there ariſe a Diſpute between the *Monarch* and the meaneſt of his Subjects

jects about the Legality or Illegality of his Commands, either the *Monarch* himſelf muſt be Judge, and then farewel Limitation; or elſe the whole people, or ſome part of them, and then farewel *Monarchy*; or elſe there muſt be no Judge at all, and then farewell *Government*.

So likewiſe in that, which they call a mixed *Monarchy*, or a Government, compoſed of *Monarchy*, *Ariſtocracy*, and *Democracy*, either the Soveraign Power muſt be Originally in the *Monarch*, and derivatively only in the others, and then farewel the Mixture; or elſe it muſt (tho acknowledged to be an indiviſible Beam of Divine Perfection) be originally ſhared amongſt them all, and then farewel the *Monarchy*. So alſo in this Mixture (as they call it) of Power, if a Difference ariſe between the Prince and the States, there being (according to their Principles) no Authoritative judge to determin it, the Government is diſſolved, and every man left at liberty to ſide with that Part, which in his Reaſon and Judgment ſtands moſt for publick Good, more than which the Wit of Man cannot ſay for *Anarchy*.

The

The unlimited Juriſdiction of Kings is ſo ſtrongly aſſerted in Scripture, that it occaſioned one, who writ in juſtification of the late Rebellion, to affirm, *That to make a King by the Standard of GOD's Word, is to make the Subjects Slaves for Conſcience ſake.* Than which, I know not, whether any thing can be ſaid more impious.

The Paternal Empire, as it was in it ſelf *hereditary*, ſo was it, as other Goods are, *alienable* by Patent, and *ſeizable* by an Uſurper. Thus amongſt the firſt Fathers of Families, diſperſed by the Confuſion of *Babel*, was *Nimrod*, who, being (no doubt) by good Right Lord or King over his own Family, and not contented therewith did againſt Right enlarge his Empire by violently ſeizing on the Rights of other Fathers of Families, and laid the Foundation of the firſt of thoſe great Kingdoms, which for the vaſt Extent of their Dominions were called the four *Monarchies* of the World. Yet this Power he got by Uſurpation, and not by any Election of, or Faction with the People or Multitude.

The Dominions indeed of Princes anciently were but ſmall, conſiſting gene-

generally but of Cities apiece, with the adjacent Teritories. Thus in a little Corner of *Asia* nine Kings met at once in Battle: In the ſmall Circuit of the Land of *Canaan Joſhuah* deſtroyed one and thirty Kings: *Adonibezek* made ſeventy Kings, whoſe Thumbs and Toes he had cut off, to feed under his Table: Two and thirty Kings came to *Benhadad* King of *Syria*: and ſeventy Kings of *Greece* went to the Wars of *Troy*.

But in proceſs of Time, partly by Conqueſt, partly by Lineal Succeſſion, and partly by the Ceſſion of many little Princes, theſe Petty Kingdoms were united, and greater Monarchies erected. Whence, tho Kings are not now the Natural Parents of their Subjects, yet they all either are, or are to be reputed, the next Heirs to thoſe Progenitors, who were at firſt the Natural Parents of the whole people, and, as ſuch, ſucceed to the Exerciſe of Soveraign Juriſdiction, not only over their own Children, but over their Brethren, and all that were ſubject to their Fathers.

As long as the firſt Fathers lived, they were properly called *Patriarchs*; but

but when the Fatherhood it ſelf was extinct, and the Right only deſcended to the next Heir, they were more ſignificantly ſtyled Kings and Princes.

If through Negligence the Knowledge of the true Heir to any Kingdom be loſt (for the Right it ſelf never can) yet does not the Supremacy devolve to the multitude, who never yet had right to Rule, or chooſe their Rulers; but to the Princes and independent Heads of Families, and (becauſe the Dependency of ancient Families is frequently obſcure, and worn out of Knowledge) to ſuch perſons, as the Wiſdom of the precedent *Monarchs* thought fit to adopt for Heads of Families, and Princes of Provinces. Theſe, and none but theſe, have in ſuch Caſe alone Power to conſent in uniting or conferring their Fatherly Right of Soveraign Authority, on whom they pleaſe. Nor does the perſon, thus elected, hold his Power as a Donative from the People, but from GOD, from whom alone he receives his Royal Charter of Univerſal Father, tho teſtified by the Miniſtry of the Heads of the People.

And

And altho I do not ſay, that all popular Governments are ſo far unlawful, as to oblige them (things being, as they are) to ſubject themſelves to *Monarchy*; yet this I muſt aver, as a moſt undoubted Truth, that no other Government, but *Monarchy*, had ever any lawful Original, there never having been any Nation, which was not for many years governed by Kings, untill Wantonneſs, Ambition, or Faction of the People made them attempt new wayes of Regiment: which Mutations alwayes proved bloody, and miſerable to their Authors, and happy in nothing, but the ſhort time of their Duration.

Excellency.

The Excellency of *Monarchy* is not only manifeſt by the Divineneſs of its Originall, but alſo by the ſingular Advantages, it has over any other Form of Government.

The chief End of Government is, that the People may (according to the Apoſtle) *Lead a quiet and peaceable Life in all Godlineſs and Honeſty.* Conſequently whereunto we find, that in all *Monarchies*, both before the Law of *Moſes*, under it, and ever ſince,

ſince, whether *Grecian*, or *Barbarian*, *Jewiſh*, or *Pagan*, *Chriſtian*, or *Turkiſh*, a ſingular Care has been taken for Religion, the Prieſts whereof have been alwayes had in ſuch Reſpect and Veneration, as to have an eminent Share in the Adminiſtration of the Government. But in all popular States, their main Devotion being exerciſed only in oppoſing and ſuppreſſing *Monarchy*, their next is to exclude the Clergy from medling with Government, wherein the *United Netherlands* and *Venice* (of which it is commonly ſaid, that the one hath all Religions, and the other none) do at this day agree.

As for Peace, it is well known, that no people ever enjoyed it without *Monarchy*. The *Lacedæmonians* preſerved themſelves by warring, and when they had gotten the Empire, were preſently undone: for they could not live at reſt, knowing no better Exerciſe than that of War: And whereas the main Preſervatives of Peace are the Durability and Order of the Government, if we examine the moſt flouriſhing *Democracy*, that ever was in the World, *viz.* that of *Rome*, we

we ſhall find, that the Duration thereof from the expulſion of *Tarquin* to *Julius Cæſar* was but four hundred and eighty years, whereas both the *Aſſyrian Monarchy* laſted without interruption at leaſt twelve hundred, and the Empire of the Eaſt fourteen hundred ninety five.

And from Order they were ſo far, that, during theſe four hundred and eighty years, there was not any ſetled Form of Government in *Rome*: for having once loſt the Natural Power of Kings, they could not find whereon to reſt. They firſt choſe out of the Senators annual Conſuls, who had, during the ſhort Time of their Government, full Regal Power: About ſixteen years after the firſt Creation of Conſuls, the Commons by Sedition prevailed, and choſe among themſelves Tribunes of the People to preſerve their Liberty: About fourty years after they left Tribunes and Conſuls, and choſe ten Men to make them Laws: Theſe after three years they diſplaced, and ſet up Tribunes and Conſuls again: Not long after they demanded, that one of the Conſuls might be choſen out of the Commonalty,

but when the Fatherhood it ſelf was extinct, and the Right only deſcended to the next Heir, they were more ſignificantly ſtyled Kings and Princes.

If through Negligence the Knowledge of the true Heir to any Kingdom be loſt (for the Right it ſelf never can) yet does not the Supremacy devolve to the multitude, who never yet had right to Rule, or chooſe their Rulers; but to the Princes and independent Heads of Families, and (becauſe the Dependency of ancient Families is frequently obſcure, and worn out of Knowledge) to ſuch perſons, as the Wiſdom of the precedent *Monarchs* thought fit to adopt for Heads of Families, and Princes of Provinces. Theſe, and none but theſe, have in ſuch Caſe alone Power to conſent in uniting or conferring their Fatherly Right of Soveraign Authority, on whom they pleaſe. Nor does the perſon, thus elected, hold his Power as a Donative from the People, but from GOD, from whom alone he receives his Royal Charter of Univerſal Father, tho teſtified by the Miniſtry of the Heads of the People.

And

And altho I do not ſay, that all popular Governments are ſo far unlawful, as to oblige them (things being, as they are) to ſubject themſelves to *Monarchy*; yet this I muſt aver, as a moſt undoubted Truth, that no other Government, but *Monarchy*, had ever any lawful Original, there never having been any Nation, which was not for many years governed by Kings, untill Wantonneſs, Ambition, or Faction of the People made them attempt new wayes of Regiment: which Mutations alwayes proved bloody, and miſerable to their Authors, and happy in nothing, but the ſhort time of their Duration.

The Excellency of *Monarchy* is not only manifeſt by the Divineneſs of its Originall, but alſo by the ſingular Advantages, it has over any other Form of Government. Excellency.

The chief End of Government is, that the People may (according to the Apoſtle) *Lead a quiet and peaceable Life in all Godlineſs and Honeſty.* Conſequently whereunto we find, that in all *Monarchies*, both before the Law of *Moſes*, under it, and ever ſince,

ſince, whether *Grecian*, or *Barbarian*, *Jewiſh*, or *Pagan*, *Chriſtian*, or *Turkiſh*, a ſingular Care has been taken for Religion, the Prieſts whereof have been alwayes had in ſuch Reſpect and Veneration, as to have an eminent Share in the Adminiſtration of the Government. But in all popular States, their main Devotion being exerciſed only in oppoſing and ſuppreſſing *Monarchy*, their next is to exclude the Clergy from medling with Government, wherein the *United Netherlands* and *Venice* (of which it is commonly ſaid, that the one hath all Religions, and the other none) do at this day agree.

As for Peace, it is well known, that no people ever enjoyed it without *Monarchy*. The *Lacedæmonians* preſerved themſelves by warring, and when they had gotten the Empire, were preſently undone: for they could not live at reſt, knowing no better Exerciſe than that of War: And whereas the main Preſervatives of Peace are the Durability and Order of the Government, if we examine the moſt flouriſhing *Democracy*, that ever was in the World, *viz.* that of *Rome*, we

we ſhall find, that the Duration thereof from the expulſion of *Tarquin* to *Julius Cæſar* was but four hundred and eighty years, whereas both the *Aſſyrian Monarchy* laſted without interruption at leaſt twelve hundred, and the Empire of the Eaſt fourteen hundred ninety five.

And from Order they were ſo far, that, during theſe four hundred and eighty years, there was not any ſetled Form of Government in *Rome*: for having once loſt the Natural Power of Kings, they could not find whereon to reſt. They firſt choſe out of the Senators annual Conſuls, who had, during the ſhort Time of their Government, full Regal Power: About ſixteen years after the firſt Creation of Conſuls, the Commons by Sedition prevailed, and choſe among themſelves Tribunes of the People to preſerve their Liberty: About fourty years after they left Tribunes and Conſuls, and choſe ten Men to make them Laws: Theſe after three years they diſplaced, and ſet up Tribunes and Conſuls again: Not long after they demanded, that one of the Conſuls might be choſen out of the Commonalty,

monalty, which after a Diſpute of threeſcore and eighteen years they carried by the ſtubbornneſs of the Tribunes, who, for five years together hindring the Election of the greater Magiſtrates, forced the Nobles to yeild to their Requeſt, leſt an Anarchy ſhould deſtroy them all: Sometimes they choſe Dictators, who were Temporary Kings, ſometimes Military Tribunes with Conſulary Power: One while the Senate made Laws, another while the People: In fine ſuch and ſo frequent were their Alterations in Government, that the beſt Hiſtorians are not able to find any perfect Form of Regiment in ſo much Confuſion. And if the Government of *Rome* may be ſaid to have been for ſome time popular; yet it was ſo to the City of *Rome* alone, all the reſt of the Dominions being ſhared into Provinces, over which their Proconſuls, Proprætors, and Legates exerciſed Regal Authority: ſo impoſſible it is to govern a Kingdom, much more many Kingdoms by the whole or greateſt part of the People.

And

And tho *Rome* in the time of her Popularity bred many admired Commanders (ſeveral of which were but very ill requited by the People) by whoſe Conduct ſhe gained ſuch Victories abroad, as amazed the World; yet even then did the Tragical Slaughter of her Citizens at home deſerve Commiſeration from her vanquiſhed Enemies. Nor were all of them able to ſupport her in times of danger; but in her greateſt Troubles ſhe was forced to create a Dictator, whoſe Authority was abſolute and unappealable, teſtifying thereby, that the laſt Refuge in Perils of State is to have recourſe to Regal Authority.

And whatever may be pretended to be the Inconveniences of *Monarchy*, yet cannot it be denied, but that they are all outweighed by the Sedition, which neceſſarily attends Popularity: There not having been a quarter of the Blood ſhed in *Rome* by the Cruelty of all her Tyrannical Emperors, as was by Seditions in the laſt hundred years of her glorious Common-wealth, when the Blood was ſuckt up in the Market-places with

Spun-

Spunges, the Current of the River *Tyber* ſtopt with the ſlaughtered Bodies of Citizens, and the Common Privies ſtuffed full of them. For the Cruelty of Tyrants rarely extends any farther, than to ſome particular perſons, that offend them: ſo that a King can never be ſo notoriouſly vitious, but he will generally favour Juſtice, and maintain Order, except in the particulars, where he is ſwayed by his inordinate Paſſion. For the Multitude of People, and the abundance of their Riches, whoſe Bodies do him ſervice in War, and whoſe Goods ſupply his preſent Wants, being the only Strength and Glory of every Prince, Natural Love to himſelf, if not Affection to his People, will make him deſirous to preſerve the Lives, and protect the Goods of his Subjects, which, as it cannot be done without Juſtice, ſo if it be not done, the Princes Loſs is thereby the greateſt. But in a popular State, every man knowing, that the Publick Good does not depend wholly upon his Care, they all mind chiefly their private Benefit, none taking the Publick to be his own Buſineſs: whence it follows,

follows, that *every man* (as it is ſaid of *Iſrael*, when they had no King) *does that, which is right in his own Eyes.* And this is the Original of that unnatural State of War, which ſome are pleaſed to miſcal the Natural Liberty of Mankind, where every man pretending a Right to every thing, there is none, that can have the leaſt Security of any thing, he enjoyes, nor yet of his very Life: ſince he may be deprived thereof by any one, that ſhall prove ſtronger than himſelf.

Britain alwayes Governed by *Monarchs*

The Iſland of *Great Britain* has alwayes had that happineſs, as never to be ſubject to any other Government, but the *Monarchical*. Not that the whole Iſland was always under the Command of one *Monarch*, (which as ſome ſay) it never was till ſince the Uniting of the Crowns of *England* and *Scotland* by King *James*, there being at *Cæſars* Arrival here no fewer than four Kings found in *Kent* alone. But that theſe were ſo many Soveraign Princes, reigning abſolutely over their own ſmall Dominions, who, at the Invaſion of the *Romans*,

joyned together in a Confederacy for their mutual Defence, of which they made by common Conſent *Caſſibelan* their Head. The Words of *Cæſar* are *Summa imperii bellique adminiſtrandi communi conſilio permiſſa eſt* Caſſivellauno: from whence ſome would infer, that the *Britains* had no King in time of Peace, but that *Caſſibelan* was by Conſent of a great Common Councel choſen King and General againſt his Landing: Contracting herein *Cæſar* himſelf, who not only affirms, that there were four Kings within the County of *Kent*, whoſe Names he likewiſe gives us; but alſo deſcribes *Caſſibelans* Territory to have been bounded by the River *Thames*, which divided it from the Maritime Provinces, and to have extended eighty Miles from the Sea, telling us withal, that, whereas before his Arrival *Caſſibelan* was in continual Wars with the Neighbouring States, the *Britiſh* Princes, in this common danger of forreign Invaſion, united in a defenſive League, and unanimouſly choſe him for their Leader.

Nor was *Britain* brought under the Power of the *Romans*, till that, the Popular

Popular State of *Rome* being after manifold Alterations ruined by its own Strength, Civil Contentions had at laſt reſetled the Government into a *Monarchy*.

And altho the Invaſions of Forreigners, the ill Conduct of our Kings, the Ambition of the Princes of the Blood, the Faction of the Nobility, and the Sedition of the Vulgar have ſometimes cauſed Diſturbance in the State; yet never was there any Attempt to aboliſh *Monarchical* Government in this Iſland, till ſuch time as, a certain hot-headed *Frenchman*, having invented a new fangled Eccleſiaſtical Government, agreeing (ſaid King *James*) with Monarchy, as GOD with the Devil, which by animating the People to Rebellion againſt, and Expulſion of their Lawful Prince, he introduced into *Geneva*, his Fanatical Diſciples here in *Great Britain*, laboring to eſtabliſh their *Diana* of the *Presbyterian* Diſcipline, and combining with certain Gentlemen, who by reading the Books of ſuch ancient Hiſtorians, as, living under Popular States, decried Regal Authority by the Name of Tyranny, and extolled

the Popular by the Name of Liberty (tho never any Tyrant was half ſo cruel as a Popular State) had imbibed *Democratical* Principles, raiſed a formidable Rebellion againſt the Father of his preſent Sacred *Majeſty*, who, being by the *Presbyterians* outed of all his Regal Prerogatives, made a private man and a Priſoner, and charged with the Guilt of all the Blood, ſhed in the Rebellion, was by their younger Brethren the *Independents* (conſequently thereunto) under a pretended Form of Juſtice barbarouſly beheaded on a Scaffold, erected for that purpoſe before the Gates of his own Royal Palace: Giving occaſion to that (no leſs true, than) witty Saying, That *the* Independents *murthered* **Charles Stuart**, *but the* Preſbyterians *killed the* **King**.

But tho, after this horrid Murther of the beſt of Kings, all the Art, that the Malice of Men or Devils could imagin, was made uſe of to change this Kingdom into a Common-Wealth; yet ſo naturally are the People of this Iſland inclined to ſubmit to nothing but *Monarchy*, that they could find no ſettlement (having in the ſpace

ſpace of twelve years tried no fewer, than five ſeveral ſorts of Regiment) till the univerſal *Genius* of the Iſle by mighty, tho inviſible, Influence concurred to recall their exil'd Soveraign, and reeſtabliſh their ancient Government.

CHAP. V.

Of the Diſcovery, Invaſion, and Conqueſt of Britain *by the* Romans.

ABout the Year of the World 3913, and fifty three years before the Birth of CHRIST, the *Britains*, having notice, that *Julius Cæſar*, the *Roman* General in *Gallia*, diſpleaſed with them for having aſſiſted the rebellious *Gauls*, intended to invade their Country, and fearing the Conſequence of his Ambition, and uſual Succeſs, to avert his Deſign, ſent Ambaſſadours to him with promiſe of Hoſtages and Obedience to the *Roman* Empire. Theſe, after Audience given, he ſent back, promiſing them fair, and exhorting them to continue firm in theſe Reſolutions: Diſcovery.

and with them his Confident *Comius*, on whom he had beſtowed the Kingdom of *Arras* to ſignifie to them his Intentions of coming ſpeedily over in perſon, giving him private Inſtructions to manage his Intereſt ſecretly with the Princes and States of *Britain*, and to gain a *Roman* Party in the Iſland.

Cæſar in the mean time, having ſent *Caius Voluſenus* to ſpy out the Coaſts, drew down his Forces into the Countrey of the *Morini* about *Bulloign*, from whence was the ſhorteſt Paſſage into *Britain*. Here he commands a general Rendezvouz of all his Naval Forces, ſummoning from all parts his Shipping.

Voluſenus after five dayes Sail being returned with ſuch ſmall Diſcoveries, as, not daring to land for fear of the *Britains*, he had been able to make from abord his Ship, *Cæſar*, who had with him two Legions, ordinarily amounting to five and twenty thouſand Foot, and four thouſand five hundred Horſe of *Romans* and their Allies, having embarkt the Foot in eighty Ships of Burthen, beſides the Gallies diſtributed amongſt the Commanders, and commanding the Horſe,

Horſe, whom he ſent eight Miles upward to another Haven, where eighteen Ships, appointed for them lay wind-bound, to follow him with ſpeed, about the third Watch of the Night with a good Gale ſet off for *Britain*: In ſight whereof coming by Ten in the Morning, and finding that Place, which was a narrow Bay, cloſe environed with Hills, upon every one whereof he beheld Multitudes of armed men, no way commodious for Landing, having called a Councel of War, to whom he imparted the Diſcoveries, made by *Voluſenus*, and gave neceſſary Orders, his whole Fleet being now come up, about three in the Afternoon he weighed Anchor, and with a favourable Wind and Tide removed eight Miles thence to a plain and open Shore, commonly ſuppoſed to be about *Deal* in *Kent*.

The *Britains*, who watched his Motions, ſending their Horſe and Chariots before, their Infantry ſpeeding after, undauntedly aſſaulted the *Romans* under their very Ships, and gave them ſo ſmart a Welcome, that *Cæſar* himſelf, tho endeavoring by all means to excuſe it, could not yet deny, but that

the reſolute Oppoſition of the *Britains* made his Souldiers forget their wonted Valour.

By the help nevertheleſs of his Gallies, which, as more apt for Motion, he commanded to row up againſt the open ſide of the Enemy, the unuſual ſtrangeneſs whereof, together with the Ratling of their Oars, and the fierce Battery of the Engines ſet up in them, made the amazed *Britains* ſtand a little at a Bay; and by the great Courage of the Standard-bearer of the tenth Legion, who, ſeeing, that the *Romans*, fearing the Depth of the Sea, or (more probably) the Readvancement of the Enemy, durſt not quit their Ships, having firſt invocated the Gods, leapt over board and with his Eagle advanced, marched boldly againſt the *Britains*, the Foot were with much difficulty diſembarkt, and the wearied Iſlanders after a ſharp diſpute forced to retire, whom *Cæſar* for want of his Horſe, that were yet kept back by the wind, was not able to purſue.

The *Britains*, finding themſelves over-maſtered, had now made their Peace, ſent in ſome Hoſtages, and promi-

promiſed more, and ſeveral of their Princes had ſubmitted themſelves and States to *Cæſar*, lying encamped, as 'tis thought, upon *Barham-Down*, when an unlookt for-Accident put them uppon new Counſels. For the eighteen Ships, which had been left behind to tranſport the *Roman* Horſe, being four dayes after *Cæſars* Arrival come within ſight of the Camp, were by a ſudden Tempeſt diſperſed, and that Night moſt of them loſt: Their Gallies alſo, which had been haled aſhore, being the ſame Night covered with a Spring-tide, and their Ships, that lay off at Anchor, ſorely ſhattered.

This the *Britiſh* Princes perceiving, and from the Compaſs of their Camp, which without Baggage was the ſmaller, gueſſing at the Number of the *Roman* Forces, conſulted together, and, ſecretly one by one withdrawing from the Camp, reſolved to ſtop all Proviſions, and to protract the Buſineſs unto Winter: judging, that if they could now deſtroy their Enemies, or intercept their Return, none would ever after dare to invade them.

Cæſar from his own Condition, and the *Britains* neglecting to ſend their

Hoſtages, ſuſpecting, what was like to happen, got up, what Corn he could, and with Materials fetcht from the Continent, and the Remains of ſuch Ships, as were quite ſpoiled, repaired the reſt: ſo that by the indefatigable Induſtry of his Souldiers all of them, but twelve, were in a ſhort time made ſerviceable.

While this was doing, *Cæſar* advertized by the Sentinels at the Camp-Gates, that an unuſual Duſt was ſeen to ariſe from that part of the Countrey, whither the ſeventh Legion was gone forth to forrage, taking with him the Cohorts of his Guards, and commanding all the reſt, but two, who were to keep the Camp, to ſpeed after him, came very opportunely, to aſſiſt his Legion, that was now over-born by the *Britains*, who, not doubting but their Enemies would on the morrow return to that Place, which they had only left unreapt of all their Harveſt, had laid themſelves in Ambuſh, and, whilſt the *Romans* were diſperſt, and buſy at their Labor, ſet upon them, killed ſome, and routed the reſt, and had now encloſed them with their Horſe and Chariots,

when,

when *Cæſars* Arrival cauſed the *Britains* to retire, and he, not thinking it convenient to offer them Battel, drew off his Legions to the Camp.

Foul weather for many dayes after hindring all Action on both ſides, the *Britains* by diſpatching Meſſengers into all parts, ſignifying to what ſmall number their Enemies were reduced, the great Hopes, there was of Spoil, and of freeing their Country from future Invaſion, if they could now make the *Romans* a ſevere Example, had got together great Multitudes both of Horſe and Foot, whom *Cæſar* having after a fierce Encounter put to flight, purſued, as far as he could, and in his return burnt and laid waſt all about him. The *Britains* the ſame day ſent Ambaſſadours to him to treat of Peace, who, glad no doubt, that he could return with ſome Shew of Honour, whereas, if they had delayed but a little he muſt either have forſaken the Iſland, or elſe periſhed for want of Proviſions, enjoyned only (for ſo great a Breach of Faith) a double number of Hoſtages, to be ſent him into *Gallia*, and about Midnight ſet Sail for the Continent, whence ſending

ing

ing to *Rome* an account of his Attempt, the Senate for this Diſcovery decreed twenty dayes of Thankſgiving to the Gods.

Invaſion. The *Britains* not ſending their Hoſtages, *Cæſar*, at his Departure (according to annual Cuſtom) for *Rome*, commanded his Legats to provide, what poſſible Shipping they could, ordering them to be low-built for the eaſier Fraughtage, and better haling aſhore, and flat-bottom'd for the more convenient Tranſporting of Horſe.

Finding at his Return ſix hundred ſuch in readineſs, with twenty eight Gallies, and above two hundred Adventurers, and other Hulks, in all a thouſand, about Sun-ſet with five Legions and two thouſand Horſe hoyſing Sail from Port *Iccius*, he was at Midnight becalmed: ſo that at Daybreak deſcrying the Iſland to bear left of him, he turned about with the Tide, and by the unwearied Labor of his Souldiers, who cheerfully tugged at the Oar, came up about Noon near the ſame Place, which the year before he had found ſo convenient for Landing. At

At his Arrival no Enemy was ſeen, the *Britains*, who had been there in great Numbers, being withdrawn into the higher Countries, terrified with the Sight of ſo vaſt a Fleet.

Having landed his Army, encamped to the beſt advantage, and learnt of ſome Fugitives, where to find the *Britains*, leaving *Quintus Atrius* with ten Cohorts and three hundred Horſe to guard his Ships, about the third Watch of the Night he advanced with his main Body twelve Miles into the Country, where upon the Banks of a River, commonly thought to be the *Stowr* in *Kent*, he ſees embattelled the *Britiſh* Forces, who with their Horſe and Chariots, having poſſeſt themſelves of the upper Ground, ſmartly oppoſed the *Romans* March; but repulſt by their Enemies Cavalry, retired into the Woods to a Place, fortified both by Art and Nature, caſt up, as it ſeemed, in time of Wars amongſt themſelves, the Paſſages whereto were on all ſides blockt up with huge Trees, felled and laid overthwart one another, within which they did their utmoſt to keep out the *Romans*, till the ſeventh Legion, having

ing raiſed a Mount, and lockt their Shields cloſe over their Heads like a Roof, without much loſs of Blood took the Place, and drave the *Britains* from their Holds, whom yet *Cæſar* would not purſue through unknown wayes; but, Evening drawing on, more wiſely employed the Time in fortifying another Camp, and refreſhing his Souldiers.

Next Morning early three Bodies of *Roman* Horſe and Foot, ſent to ſeek the Enemy, were not yet got out of ſight, when News, coming Poſt from *Q. Atrius*, that moſt of the Fleet, wrackt that Night by a ſudden Tempeſt, lay ſplit on the Shore, made *Cæſar* call back his Forces, and return to his Ships: of which finding about forty utterly loſt, and the reſt ſo ſhattered, as not to be new rigged without much Labour, he aſſembled, what Shipwrights he could, both from his own Legions, and the Continent, ſending Orders to *Labienus*, whom he had left to make good the Port in *Gallia*, to fall a Building more; and in ten dayes time, not reſpiting his Souldiers either Night or Day, drew up all his Ships, and entrencht them within his Camp. This

This done, leaving there the former Guard, he marcht up to the ſame Wood, where he had defeated the *Britains*, whom he finds now repoſſeſt of that Place with far greater Numbers, under the Command of *Caſſibelan*, choſen by the *Britiſh* Princes, whom common Danger had now united, for their chief Leader: who with his Horſe and Chariots ſtoutly fought the *Roman* Cavalry in their March, but being ſomewhat overmacht, retreated to the Woods and Hills, whither the *Romans* too eagerly purſuing them, the *Britains*, rallying again, cut off the forwardeſt, and after a while, when *Cæſar*, who thought all over, was buſied about the entrenching of his Camp, of a ſudding breaking out of their Coverts, fiercely aſſaulted the very Stations of his Guards and Sentries, and whilſt two of the choiceſt Cohorts, drawn out of two Legions, and ſent to the Alarm, ſtood at ſmall diſtance from each other, amazed at the Novelty and Fierceneſs of the Fight, charged back again through the midſt without Loſs of a Man.

Next Morning the *Britains* ſhewed themſelves upon the Hills, and, tho

tho not ſo boldly as before, skirmiſhed with the *Roman* Horſe; but about Noon, *Cæſar* having ſent forth three Legions, and all his Horſe to ſeek Fodder, they ſuddenly ſet upon the Forragers, and charged up after them to the very Legions and their Standards, where they were couragiouſly repelled by the *Romans*, whoſe Horſe, well ſeconded by their Foot, ſo cloſely purſued them, that the *Britains*, not having leiſure to rally, ſtand, or deſcend from their Chariots, were many of them ſlain, and the reſt generally routed.

Caſſibelan, after this Overthrow, reſolving in a manner to change the whole Nature of the War, disbanded many Auxiliary Forces, that had from all parts been ſent him, and with the choiceſt of his Men, and four thouſand Chariots, which he judged ſufficient to hinder the Enemies Incurſions, ſet himſelf to attend *Cæſars* March: Who, advertized thereof, drew his Army toward the Frontiers of *Caſſibelans* Kingdom, which was bounded by the *Thames*, fordable only in one Place, conjectured to be about *Coway Stakes* neer *Oatlands*, where

where *Caſſibelan*, having cauſed the Bank to be ſet with ſharp Stakes, and the Ford knockt full of them, covered with Water, had drawn up his men in great numbers to oppoſe the Paſſage of the *Romans*, who, having notice of this Stratagem by their Captives, with greater Circumſpection entred the River, firſt the Horſe, then the Foot, wading up to the Neck in Water, ſo reſolutely, and ſo faſt, that the *Britains*, having beſtowed a few Darts upon them, retir into Woods and ſecret Coverts, where lining with their Horſe and Chariots the Roads, through which *Cæſar* was to paſs, and driving the Inhabitants and their Cattel into places of ſecurity within the Woods, with continual and unexpected Sallies upon the *Roman* Horſe, cutting off ſome, and terrifying others, they compel'd them ſo cloſe together, that they could not fetch in Prey or Booty without ill ſucceſs.

The Affairs of *Cæſar*, who had nothing left in his way but empty Fields and Houſes, had now but a bad Aſpect, his Army, whoſe Horſe durſt not ſtir out of the Protection of their

their Foot, being almoſt ſtarved, when a Diſſention, ariſing among the *Britains*, brought them joyful News of a Supply. The *Trinobantes*, one of the moſt potent States amongſt the *Britains*, out of an old Grudge againſt *Caſſibelan*, who had ſlain their King *Immanuentius*, and forced his Son *Mandubratius*, called alſo *Androgorius* and *Androgius*, to ſecure his Life by Flight into *Gallia*, ſent Ambaſſadours to *Cæſar*, imploring his Protection, promiſing Obedience to the *Roman* State, and deſiring *Mandubratius*, who was then with *Cæſar*, to be ſent to take Poſſeſſion of his Fathers Crown. *Cæſar* granted their Requeſt, having firſt demanded fourty Hoſtages, and Proviſions for his Army, which they ſent in, and had their Confines protected from the Souldier.

By their Example did ſeveral other States alſo ſubmit themſelves, from whom *Cæſar* having learnt, that *Caſſibelians* chief Seat, ſuppoſed to be *Verulam* (near the now St. **Albans**) was not far off, fenc't about with Woods and Marſhes, and full of Men and Cattel, went thither, aſſaulted it in two Places, and after ſome Diſpute forced the

the *Britains* to fly out at a Poſtern Gate, and leave the Plunder of the Town to the Enemy, by whom many of them were cut off in their Flight.

Yet did not *Caſſibelan* deſert himſelf, but ſending into *Kent*, directed *Cingetorix*, *Carvilius*, *Taximagulus*, and *Segonax*, four Kings, reigning in thoſe Countryes, who ſtill kept faithful to the Union, to raiſe, what Forces they could, and aſſault the Camp, where the *Roman* Shipping was entrencht; but theſe *Kentiſh* Souldiers being raw and unskild, not able to endure one Sally, were totally routed, and *Cingetorix* made Priſonor.

Caſſibelan, informed of this Defeat, and ſeeing the treacherous Defection of ſo many States, for the Preſervation of himſelf and Country, by the Mediation of *Comius* of *Arras* ſent Ambaſſadours to *Cæſar*, who, having enjoyned him not to Moleſt *Mandubratius* and the *Trinobantes*, ſetled the Annual Tribute to be paid by the *Britains* to *Rome*, and received Hoſtages, with a great number of Captives put off to Sea, having at twice embarkt his whole Army. Returning

to

to *Rome*, he offered to *Venus Genitrix*, the Patroneſs of his Family, a Corſlet of *Britiſh* Pearles, as a Teſtimony of his Glorious Enterprize.

Julius Cæſar having now taken his laſt Farewell of *Britain*, the *Romans*, hindred partly by Civil Diſſenſions, and partly by other more urgent Affairs, had not the leaſt Thoughts of making any farther Attempt againſt it for twenty Years together, when *Octavius Auguſtus*, now ſetled in the poſſeſſion of the *Roman* Empire, having advanced as far as *Gallia*, in order to the reducing of *Britain*, was diverted by a Revolt in *Pannonia*: as he was ſeven Years after by the unſetledneſs of *Gallia*, and the coming of the *Britiſh* Ambaſſadours thither to him; and the Year following by new Commotions, ariſing in *Spain*. Being ſo often croſt in his Deſigns upon *Britain*, he no more bent his thoughts that way, being ſatisfied with the Reſpects, paid him by the *Britiſh* Princes, who courted his Friendſhip with Gifts offered in the Capitol, and other obſequious Addreſſes. The like amicable Correſpondence they held alſo with his Succeſſor *Tiberius*, whom more

more highly to oblige, they courteouſly entertained, and ſent home the Souldiers of *Germanicus*, caſt by Tempeſt on their Shore. *Caligula* indeed, to whoſe Protection, *Adminius*, Son of *Cunobelyn*, baniſhed by his Father, had betaken himſelf, making ſemblance to invade *Britain*, brought down all his Army to the *Belgick* Shore, where being informed, that the *Britains*, having levyed the Strength of their Nation, ſtood ready to oppoſe his Landing, if he ſhould make any attempt upon them, he commanded his Souldiers, whom he ſuppoſed to have *Lyncean* Eyes, to take a full view of the *Britiſh* Forces, and having encouraged them not to fear their great Numbers, with unmatchable Valor rowed a Stones caſt or two from the Shore, where reſolutely defying the *Britains*, he cauſed the Engines of Battery to be ſet up, the Trumpets to ſound a Charge, and the Souldiers to fall on, but no Enemy appearing, he ordered them to plunder the Ocean of its Shells, and therewith fill their Helmets and Laps; and that the Memory of ſo Heroick an Enterprize might not be loſt, he

erected

erected in the ſame place an high Tower, wherein Lights were ſet to direct Mariners in their Courſes by Night, the Ruins whereof, ſometimes ſeen at Low-Water on the Coaſt of *Holland*, are to this day by the Inhabitants ealled **Britten-huis.**

Conqueſt. The *Britains*, for well-near an hundred Years after the departure of *Julius Cæſar*, had been governed by their own Princes, unmoleſted by the *Romans*, to whom after the firſt breaking out of the Civil War they paid not any Tribute, except ſuch eaſy Cuſtoms, as were levied on the Commodities, wherewith they traded into *Gallia*, when, inteſtin Diviſions among themſelves making way for a *Roman* Conqueſt, *Claudius Druſus*, now the third time Conſul, inſtigated by the perſwaſions of *Bericus* (of whom there is no farther knowledge) and other Fugitives, whom the *Britains* demanding, he had refuſed to deliver up, and they for that cauſe had denied farther Amity with *Rome*, reſolved upon an Invaſion of *Britain*, ſending Orders to *Aulus Plautius* the Prætor to tranſport thither the Legions, lying

lying in *Gallia*, who, complaining, that they muſt now be put to make War beyond the Worlds end, were at laſt with much difficulty prevailed upon, and from three ſeveral Ports ſet ſail for *Britain*; but meeting with croſs Winds, were driven back and diſheartned, till in the Night a Meteor darting Flames from the Eaſt, and directing, as they fancied, their Courſe for this Iſland, they again put to Sea, and landed without oppoſition, the *Britains*, who had heard of their Unwillingneſs, having neglected to provide againſt them, and now retiring into the Woods, where they intended to wear them out with Delayes, as their Predeceſſors had formerly done *Cæſar*.

The *Britiſh* Armies were commanded by two young Sons of the deceaſed *Cunobelyn*, who, keeping their Forces ſeparate, were by *Plautius*, after he had with much difficulty found them out, eaſily overcome, firſt *Caractacus*, then *Togodumnus*: Whereupon the *Dobuni*, formerly ſubject to the *Catieuchlani*, ſubmitted themſelves to the Conqueror, who, leaving a Garriſon there, marched on to a certain

tain River, where finding the Enemy, who thought, the *Romans* without a Bridge could not poſſibly get over, lying on the farther ſide careleſs and ſecure, he ſent firſt the *Germans*, that were in his Army, whoſe Cuſtom it was armed to ſwim with eaſe the ſtrongeſt Current: Theſe, having got footing on the other ſide, ſpent, as they were commanded, all their Darts on the *Britains* Horſes, which, falling dead in their Harneſs, rendred the Chariots, wherein conſiſted their chief Art of fighting, not only unſerviceable, but cumberſom, when *Veſpaſian* with his Brother *Sabinus*, ſent by *Plautius* to ſecond them, unexpectedly aſſailing thoſe, who were leaſt aware, with great ſlaughter forced the Enemy to retire: Who, yet the next day reuniting, with ſuch Courage fought the *Romans*, that the Victory hung in ſuſpence, till *Caius Sidius Geta*, in danger of being taken, valiantly recovering himſelf, turned the Scales on the *Romans* ſide, for which he afterwards at *Rome* received high Honours.

The *Britains*, after this, drew back to the Mouth of the *Thames*, which, acquainted with the Shallows and Flats,

Flats, they eaſily croſſed, whom, their Enemies, unadviſedly following, were in great hazard of being loſt; yet the *Germans* getting over by ſwimming, and others by a Bridge a little higher, ſo encompaſt the *Britains*, that they did great Execution upon them; but too eagerly purſuing them into Bogs and Marſhes, loſt as many of their own.

Plautius, who in theſe Engagements had loſt many of his Souldiers, perceiving the Courage of the *Britains* rather inflamed, than cooled, by their Defeats, and their Rage exaſperated by the Death of *Togodumnus*, ſlain in one of the former Encounters, durſt not proceed any farther; but having been commanded by *Claudius* on any great Emergencies of Affairs to give him ſpeedy Intelligence, accordingly ſent to him, who, waiting ready with a vaſt Preparation, marched through *Gallia*, leading with him (ſo apprehenſive was he of the Difficulty of this Enterprize) beſides his *Roman* Legions, and the Auxiliaries of *Germans* and *Gauls*, many armed Elephants, to meet the naked Valor of the undaunted *Britains*.

Having with this Equipage croſſed the Channel, he directly joyned *Plautius*, who with the Reſidue of his Men lay encamped at the Mouth of the *Thames* to ſecure his Landing, and having paſt the River, diſcovered the *Britains*, who, having the Courage, but wanting the Conduct of old *Caſſibelan*, ſcrupled not with daring Manhood to combat in open Field almoſt the whole Power of the *Roman* Empire, whereby being overcome, *Camalodunum* (now Maldon) the Royal Seat of *Cunobelyn*, with many other important Places, ſome by Force, others by Treaty, were yielded up to *Claudius*, who for theſe Succeſſes was often by his Army ſaluted *Imperator*, a Title before this time never given above once to any in the ſame War, as if there could not Honor enough be given to ſo great Atchievments.

Claudius, having diſarmed the *Britains*, but remitted the Confiſcations of their Goods, for which they, who (by their former long acquaintance with the *Romans*) were well-skild in all the Arts of Flattery, erected Temples, and offered ſacrifices to him,

as

as to a God, leaving *Plautius* to ſubdue, what remained, returned to *Rome*, whence he had been abſent only ſix Months, and in *Britain* but ſixteen Dayes, ſending before him the News of his Victories to the Senate, who for ſuch tranſcendent Merits decreed exceſſive Honours: Arches, Triumphs, annual Solemnities, and the Sir-name of *Britannicus* both to himſelf and Son.

From this Time *Britain* may be reckoned amongſt the Provinces of the *Roman* Empire, whereunto it now began to be ſubjected, tho not without great Reſiſtance of the Inhabitants, who after the departure of *Claudius* gave *Plautius* Work enough to deſerve at his Return to *Rome* a petty Triumph, riding on the Emperours Right hand into the *Capitol*, Triumphal Ornaments and other Honors being given alſo to *Veſpaſian*, who in theſe Wars had ſubdued two powerful Nations, above twenty Towns, and the Iſle of *Wight*. Nor was *Oſtorius Scapula*, the Succeſſor of *Plautius*, leſs buſied, the *Britains*, who were not yet ſubdued, at his very firſt Coming making Incurſions upon thoſe, who

had ſubmitted to the *Romans*; but he, by an unexpected Aſſault overcoming them, and diſarming all thoſe, of whom he had any Suſpicion, placed many Garriſons upon the Rivers *Sabrina* and *Antona*. Then having vanquiſhed the *Iceni*, and ſpoiled the Countrey of the *Cangi*, ſuppoſed to be a ſmall Territory in **Cheſhire**, he was come to the *Iriſh* Sea, when he was recalled by Commotions amongſt the *Brigantes*, whom, by puniſhing ſome, and pardoning the reſt, he ſoon quieted, and having planted *Camalodunum* with a Colony of Veteran Souldiers, he marched forth againſt the *Silures*, who under the Command of *Caractacus*, upon whoſe Courage and Conduct they very much relied, were at a place (ſuppoſed to be *Caer Caradoc* on the Weſt Edge of *Shropſhire*) not without great Slaughter of the *Romans*, whom, not able to endure the Galling of the *Britiſh* Darts, they forced to make a *Teſtudo* of their Shields, at length overcome, the Wife and Daughter of *Caractacus* taken Priſoners, his Brethren reduced, and he himſelf by *Cartiſmandua*, Queen of the *Brigantes*, to whom he fled for Pro-

Protection, treacherously delivered up to the *Romans*, against whom he had held out nine years, and by them sent to *Rome*, where the Gallantry of his Deportment in his Afflictions procured Pardon for himself and all the rest. To *Ostorius*, whose Actions were esteemed equal to theirs, that had brought in Bonds to *Rome* the greatest Princes, was a Triumph decreed by the Senate.

After this, tho those *Britains*, that were yet unsubjected, did with perpetual Skirmishes and Excursions so infest the *Roman* Province, that the very Vexation of it cost *Ostorius* his Life, yet did the *Romans* still keep their Hold, and by Degrees extend their Conquests: till about the third year of *Nero*, *Boadicea*, Widow to *Prasutagus*, King of the *Iceni*, who at his death had made the Emperor Coheir with his two Daughters, taking advantage of the Absence of *Paulinus Suetonius* the Governour, who, having subdued many *British* Nations, was busied in conquering the Isle of *Mona* (now called **Anglesey**) to revenge the barbarous Usage, her self and Daughters had received from

the *Romans*, ſollicited the *Britains*, already by the Oppreſſions of *Catus Decianus* the Procurator, *Seneca* the Philoſopher, and others deeply diſcontented, and by the intolerable Licentiouſneſs of the Souldiery highly exaſperated, to a Revolt; and having ſacked *Camalodunum*, routed *Petilius Crealis*, and cut his Legion to Pieces, deſtroyed *London* and *Verulam*, and ſlain ſeventy thouſand *Romans* and their Allies, ſhe endangered the utter Extirpation of the *Roman* Goverment in this Iſland, when *Suetonius*, who was opportunely returned out of *Angleſey*, having got together about ten thouſand men, at one Battel overthrew her Army of two hundred and thirty thouſand, fourſcore thouſand whereof he ſlew, with the loſs only of four hundred *Romans*, and as many more wounded: the Grief of which Defeat, aſſiſted (as ſome ſay) by Poyſon, put a Period to the Life of *Boadicea*.

Britain, which was wel-nigh loſt, being thus by one Battel recovered, the vindicative Nature of *Suetonius*, who, tho otherwiſe a very worthy perſon, over-proud of his Victory, gave too much way to his Anger againſt

gainſt the *Britains*, cauſed thoſe, that were yet untamed, to ſtand out, encouraged the rather thereunto by the Differences between him and the new Procurator *Julius Claſſicianus*. But *Suetonius* being recalled, his Succeſſor *Petronius Turpilianus*, ſet himſelf wholly to quiet the Province, without making any new Attempts, ſo that thenceforward the *Britains*, who lived unmoleſted, beginning to ſuck in the Pleaſures of Vice, were more enſlaved by the *Roman* Luxuries, than ever they had been by their Arms.

In this poſture Affairs continued here, till that *Veſpaſian*, having taken poſſeſſion of the Empire, ſent hither *Petilius Crealis*, who had many Battels with the *Brigantes*, over whom tho he obtained ſome Victories, yet he had alwayes enough of War. His Succeſſor *Julius Frontinus* ſubdued the ſtout and warlike Nation of the *Silures*. But *Julius Agricola*, ſent into *Britain* in the laſt year of *Veſpaſian*, extended the *Roman* Limits beyond all his Predeceſſors: For at his very entrance into this Government he overthrew, and almoſt extirpated the whole Nation of the *Ordovices*, and

gained the Iſle of *Mona*, from the Poſſeſſion whereof the Rebellion of the *Britains* had called back *Suetonius*. After which by proportionating with Equality the impoſed Tribute, removing the Exactions and exorbitant Fees of Officers, and bridling the Extravagance and Licentiouſneſs of his Domeſticks and Souldiers, he brought the People to be in love with Peace, which before ſeemed no leſs formidable to them, than War it ſelf: So that having firſt by many Inrodes terrified the Enemy, and then by his gentle Demeanor allured them, ſeveral Cities, which hitherto had refuſed to bend, voluntarily ſubmitted to him, gave Hoſtages, and received Gariſons, for which he providently choſe Places of ſuch advantage, that never any of them was either forced, yielded up, or quitted. Then encouraging the *Britains*, who before lived rude and ſcattered, to build Houſes, Temples, and Places for Publick Reſort, he taught them the Inſtitutes and Cuſtoms of a Civil Life, cauſing their Noblemens Sons to be inſtructed in the Liberal Sciences, and by preferring the Wits of *Britain* before thoſe of

of *Gallia*, bringing them, who before hated the *Roman* Language, to be in love with the *Latin* Eloquence. Now likewiſe came in the Gown, and other Faſhions of the *Romans*, and by Degrees all thoſe Incitements of Vice, and Voluptuous Living, which the Luxurious miſcall Civility.

Glota and *Bodotria* (called at this day **Dunbritton** and **Edinborough** Friths) two oppoſite Arms of the Sea, disjoined only by a Neck of Land, with all the Creeks and Inlets on this Side, being now held by the *Romans*, and the Enemy ſhut up (as it were) in another Iſland, *Agricola* paſſed over into, and ſubdued Nations, till then unknown, ſuppoſed to be the *Orcades*, and other *Scotch* Iſles, and placed Garriſons likewiſe in that part of *Britain*, which faced *Ireland*, at the Conqueſt whereof he alſo aimed, courteouſly entertaining for that purpoſe one of the *Iriſh* Kings, driven out of his Country by Civil Wars, whom he kept with him for a fit Occaſion.

But an Apprehenſion of a general Riſing of the Nations beyond *Bodotria* called him away from this deſign: for underſtanding, that they had

forelaid the Paſſages by land, he commanded his Fleet to bear along the Shores, and up the Friths and Harbors, himſelf with even Marches keeping up cloſe to it, ſo that both Land and Sea Forces joined commonly at night with Shouts and loud Greetings: Which much daunted the *Britains*, not accuſtomed to ſee their Sea ſo ridden.

Yet the *Caledonians*, generally taking Arms, and attacking ſundry Caſtles, ſtrook no ſmall Terror into ſeveral of the *Roman* Commanders, who, concealing their Fears under the Name of cautious Counſel, adviſed the General to retreat on this ſide *Bodotria*. But he, whoſe Reſolutions were otherwiſe, having Intelligence, that the Enemy would fall on in many Bodies, divided alſo his Army into three parts: Which the *Britains* learning, changed Counſels, and with all their Forces aſſailed by night that part of the *Roman* Army, which they knew to be the weakeſt, whom ſurprizing between Sleep and Fear, they had now begun ſome Execution, when *Agricola*, who was informed of their March, following them at the Heels, commanded the lighteſt of his Horſe and Foot

Foot to charge on their Backs, the whole Army ſoon ſeconding them with a Shout: So that by approach of Day the *Caledonians*, finding themſelves encompaſt with the glittering *Roman* Enſigns, after a ſharp Fight betook themſelves to their old Refuge, the Woods and Boggs, or elſe that day had probably made a total End of the War. The *Romans*, reencouraged with this Succeſs, and now boaſting, who but ere while trembled, with one voice cried out to be led on, as far as there was any *Britiſh* Ground. Nor did the *Britains*, who imputed that Dayes Victory not to the Valor of their Enemies, but to the Policy of their General, abate any thing of their Stoutneſs; but arming their Youth, and conveying their Wives and Children to places of *S*afety, with ſolemn and ſacred vows bound themſelves to mutual aſſiſtance againſt the common Adverſary.

In the mean time a Cohort of *Uſipians*, here in *Britain*, having ſlain their Centurion, and other Officers in a Mutiny, fearing Puniſhment, fled to Sea without any Pilot in three Pinnaces, and being driven at random about

about the Coaſt, uſed Piracy, where they landed, till, after various Fortunes, taken firſt by the *Suevians*, afterwards by the *Friſians*, they were ſold into *Britain*, where being known, they firſt diſcovered to the *Romans*, that *Britain* was an Iſland.

The Summer following *Agricola*, having gained this Knowledge, ſending forth his Navy to ſcour the Coaſts, and by various and uncertain Landings to divert and diſunite the Enemy, with a flying Army, wherein were many *Britains*, whoſe Courage and Fidelity he had long experienced, came as far as the Mountain *Grampius*, where the *Caledonians* to the number of thirty thouſand were aſſembled under the command of *Galgacus*, whom both his Birth and Merit made their chief Leader. He by his rough Oratory in deteſtation of Servitude and the *Roman* Yoke having augmented the Eagerneſs of his Followers, and *Agricola* having incited his by exhorting them to Glory and Victory, the Armies joyned Battle, where after a vehement and various Conteſt the *Romans* clearly wan the Day, ten thouſand of their Enemies being

being ſlain, and the reſt ſo totally diſcomfited, that the next day there was not a Man of them to be ſeen, all being fled, none knew whither.

Agricola, informed hereof by his Scouts, Summer being far ſpent, and it being now no fit Time to divide his Forces, leads his Army amongſt the *Horeſti*, thought to be the Inhabitants of **Eskdale** in *Scotland*, from whom having received Hoſtages, he commanded his Navy to ſail round *Britain*, whilſt himſelf with ſlow Marches, that he might aw the new-conquered Nations by his Delay in paſſing, placed his Men in their Winter Quarters. His Fleet, having proſperouſly and ſpeedily compaſt the Iſle, put in at the Port *Trutulenſis*, now **Richborough**, neer *Sandwich*, from whence it firſt ſet out.

Agricola, envied by the Emperour *Domitian*, in the fourth year of whoſe Reign, *Anno CHRISTI* 86. this Victory was gotten, was ſoon after recalled, leaving his Province to his Succeſſor quiet and ſecure.

The *Roman* Province in *Britain*, extended thus by *Agricola* as far as *Glota* & *Bodotria*, or the Friths of **Dunbritton** and

and Edenborough, was by the Emperour *Hadrian*, following the Advice of *Auguſtus* and *Tiberius* to gird the Empire within moderate Bounds, reduced to a narrower Compaſs. For he, giving the Northern Nations, no longer now called *Britains*, but henceforth firſt *Caledonians*, afterward *Picts* & *Scots*, more Room to Inhabit, quitted the colder and more barren Soils, reſerving only the moſt delicate Part of the Iſland, which, to hinder the *Caledonian* Boars from breaking in and rooting it up, he incloſed (like a precious Garden-Plot) with a mighty Wall of fourſcore Miles in length from the Bay of *Itun* (or *Solway-Frith*) on the *Iriſh* Sea to *Tinmouth* on the *German* Ocean: Which Wall, decayed by the Injuries of Time, and the Incurſions of the Enemy, was reedified by the Emperor *Septimius Severus*, who fortified it with a deep Trench, and many Turrets, erected at ſuch convenient Diſtances, that the Sound of a Trumpet, tho againſt the Wind, might be heard from one to another. In the ſame Wall alſo is ſaid to have been artificially ſet a Brazen Trunk, which, running from Tower to Tower,

er, ſerved upon the Invaſion of the Enemy to give ſpeedy and ſecret Intelligence. But this Wall now lying along, and no Pipe remaining, many Tenants at this day hold Farms of the King in **Cornage**, whereby they are obliged by winding of an Horn to give Notice to their Neighbours of the Enemies Approach.

Agricola, having thus conquered all the Southern Part of this Iſland, abrogated moſt of the antient Rites and Cuſtomes of the *Britains*, in the Room whereof the *Roman* Laws, Uſages, and Learning began here to Flouriſh. Their humble Cottages he changed into fair Houſes and ſtately Palaces, ſuperb Porticoes, and ſumptuous Baths: Their Diet was now more curious, and their Apparel more magnificent: Their cumberſome Chariots were turned into the Coaches and delicate Litters of *Rome*, and for the Convenience of Travel Roads and Cauſies began to be made through the whole Iſland, and paved with Stone.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

How Britain *was governed under the* Romans.

BRITAIN, not being annexed to the *Roman* Empire till after the Diviſion of Provinces made by *Auguſtus*, had this Priviledge above other Nations, that it was never ſubject to any Conſular or Proconſular Deputy after the manner of other Provinces; but was alwayes eſteemed to be *Præſidialis*, or under the immediate Protection of the Emperor, held by his Garriſons, and governed by Lieutenants, ſent and recalled at his ſole Will and Pleaſure.

The *Britains* had alſo (even within the *Roman* Pale) for a time Kings of their own, the laſt of which was *Lucius*; ſurnamed **Leber-maur**, who flouriſhed in the time of the Emperour *Commodus Antoninus*. This, tho it carried with it a certain ſhew of Liberty, was yet only the uſual Method of the *Roman* State, firſt practiced in the Time of their Democratick Government, when their Inſolence was ſuch, as to make Kings the Inſtruments

ments of their Ambition, whom they firſt drew up with Plumes of Majeſty, and ſeemed even to adore; but, when their Turns were once ſerved, with as great Contempt and Ingratitude (according to the conſtant Humor of Commonwealths) they trampled upon them.

For the governing of *Britain* one Legat was thought ſufficient, till the Emperor *Septimius Severus*, finding by experience, that it was a Province too great and powerful to be truſted in the hands of one Man, firſt divided it into two Governments, committing the North part thereof to *Virius Lupus*, and the South to *Heraclytus*.

From the Time of *Conſtantin* the *Great* there were no more Proprætors or Lieutenants in *Britain*: For he, having ordained four Prefects of the *Prætorium*, viz. of the *Eaſt*, of *Illyricum*, of *Italy*, and of *Gaul*, and two Leaders or Commanders of the Forces, the one of the Foot, the other of the Horſe, in the *Weſt*, whom they termed *Præſentales*, ordered the Government of *Britain* in this manner.

For Civil Government there ruled over *Britain* the Prefect of the *Prætorium*

rium in *Gaul*, whoſe Vice-gerent was the Vicar General of *Britain*, honored with the Title *Spectabilis*, and having under him (according to the number of the Provinces) two Conſular Deputies, and three Preſidents, who had the hearing of Civil and Criminal Cauſes.

For Military Affairs, there ruled the Leader or Commander of the Foot in the *Weſt*, under whom were the Count of *Britain*, the Count of the *Saxon* Coaſt along *Britain*, and the Duke of *Britain*, every one of which was likewiſe ſtiled *Spectabilis*.

The Count of *Britain* ſeemeth to have ruled the Inland parts of the Iſland, having with him ſeven Companies of Foot, and nine Troops of Horſe.

The Count of the *Saxon* Coaſt along *Britain*, who defended the Maritime parts againſt the *Saxons*, and is by *Ammianus* called *Comes tractûs Maritimi*, had for Defence of the Sea-coaſts ſeven Companies of Foot, two Guidons of Horſe, the ſecond Legion, and one Cohort.

The Duke of *Britain*, who defended the Frontiers againſt the *Barbari-*

ans

ans, had the Command of thirty eight Garriſon-Forts, wherein fourteen thouſand Foot and nine hundred Horſe kept their Stations: ſo that in thoſe dayes (according to the Computation of *Pancirolus*) *Britain* maintained about nineteen thouſand two hundred Foot, and ſeventeen hundred Horſe in ordinary.

Beſides theſe, the *Comes ſacrarum largitionum*, who managed the Emperors Finances, had under him in *Britain* the *Rationalis* or Auditor of the Sums or Revenues of *Britain*, the Provoſt of the *Auguſtian* Treaſures in *Britain*, and the Procurator of the *Gynegium* in *Britain*, where the Cloaths of the Emperor and his Souldiers were woven.

The *Comes rerum Privatarum* had alſo his Rational of private State in *Britain*, to ſay nothing of other inferior Officers.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Of the firſt introducing of Chriſtianity *into* Britain: *The Converſion of King* Lucius: *The Perſecution under* Dioclesian: *The Eſtabliſhment of the* Chriſtian *Faith by* Conſtantin.

AS the rude and barbarous Manners of the *Britains* gave place to the *Roman* Civility: ſo the Bloody Cruelties of their Idolatrous Superſtitions were abrogated by the Introduction of *Chriſtian* Religion, for the admittance whereof a Paſſage was opened by means of the Correſpondence between *Britain* and the reſt of the *Roman* Empire.

It was in the Year of the World 3966. the two and fortieth of the Emperour *Auguſtus*, fifty three Years after the firſt Arrival of *Julius Cæſar* in *Britain*, and the third Year of the *Britiſh* King *Cunobelyn*, the whole World then enjoying a generall Peace, that the Prince of Peace, our everbleſſed Lord and Saviour JESUS CHRIST, the only eternal Son of GOD, was miraculouſly born of a pure

pure Virgin in *Bethlehem*, the City of *David*.

This our glorious Redeemer, having for the ſpace of three and thirty years led a Life, no leſs poor and painful, than holy and exemplary, offered himſelf upon a Croſs to his eternal Father for to expiate the Sins of Mankind in the eighteenth year of the Emperour *Tiberius*, who, having received an Account of the Death of this Saint of Saints, as alſo of his great Vertue, and ſtupendious Miracles, from *Pilat*, then Governor of *Judea*, publiſhed it in the Senat, by whom he would have had CHRIST admitted into the number of the *Roman* Gods; but they, diſpleaſed, that *Pilat* wrote only to the Emperour, and not to them, would by no means conſent thereunto.

Chriſtianity brought into Britain.

The Emperour however forbidding upon pain of Death all perſons to perſecute the Diſciples of JESUS, the glorious Goſpel, preacht by his Apoſtles, upon whom, the better to enable them thereunto, he had fifty dayes after his Reſurrection conferred the Gift of ſpeaking unknown Langua-

Languages by the Deſcending of the Holy Ghoſt, did even in the Dayes of this ſame *Tiberius* ſo far extend it ſelf, as to ſpread its bright Beams upon this remote and frozen Iſland of *Britain*.

St. James In the Year of CHRIST 41. being the third of *Caligula*, the holy Apoſtle St. *James*, returning out of *Spain*, viſited amongſt other Countreys this our Iſland, and here preached the Goſpel, the effects whereof were ſo prevalent, that many ſtiff-necked *Britains* ſubmitted themſelves to the eaſy Yoke of our Redeemer. Amongſt theſe there is recorded one *Suetonius*, born of noble Parentage, who, being converted to the *Chriſtian* Faith here in *Britain*, undertook a Voyage to *Rome*, that he might be more perfectly inſtructed by St. *Peter*, by whom being baptized, and named *Beatus*, he was after ſufficient Inſtruction employed in the Apoſtolical Office of teaching others, and became the firſt Planter of *Chriſtianity* amongſt the *Helvetians*.

St. Peter. The great hope of happy Succeſs is

is ſuppoſed chiefly to have induced St. *Peter*, when the *Jews* were baniſhed *Rome* by the Fmperor *Claudius*, in whoſe ſecond year he came thither, to repair into *Britain*, where he continued a long time, converting ſeveral Nations, and erecting many Churches, till warned by Angels, after he had conſtituted and ordained Biſhops, Prieſts, and Deacons, he returned to *Rome*, and was there ſoon after crowned with Martyrdom.

A tedious impatience to ſee the horrible Actions of *Nero* forced St. *Paul* alſo to quit *Rome*, and diſperſe the precious Seed of the Goſpel even as far as *Britain*. This is expreſly teſtified by *Venantius Fortunatus*, who, in his Poem upon the Life of St. *Martin*, ſpeaking of St. *Paul*, ſaith. St. *Paul*.

Tranſit & Oceanum, *vel quâ facit*
Inſula Portum,
Quaſque Britannus *habet Terras*,
atque ultima Thule.

With St. *Peter* or St. *Paul*, one of whoſe Diſciples he was, is St. *Ariſtobulus* ſuppoſed to have come into *Britain*, where being made a Biſhop, he preach- St. *Ariſtobulus*.

preached the Goſpel of CHRIST, and having conſtituted Churches, and Ordained Prieſts and Deacons, here happily ended his Life.

St. *Joſeph* of *Arimathea.*

About the latter End of *Nero*'s Reign and before the bleſſed Apoſtles St. *Peter* and St. *Paul* were conſummated by a glorious Martyrdom, *Suetonius Paulinus* being *Roman* Lieutenant in *Britain*, St. *Joſeph* of *Arimathea*, ſent hither (as ſome ſay) by St. *Peter*, or (as others) by St. *Philip* the Apoſtle, with eleven Companions, entring into this Iſland, addreſſed himſelf to the *Britiſh* King *Arviragus*, who not only gave them permiſſion freely to convert his Subjects, but extended alſo his Liberality to them, affording them a place of Retreat in an Iſland, called at that time *Avalon*, or **the Iſle of Apples**, afterwards by the *Britains Iniſwytrin*, or **the Glaſſy Iſland**, by the *Saxons* in the ſame ſenſe *Glaſtney*, and by the *Latins Glaſconia*. Here the Holy Men made it their firſt Work to build for the Worſhip of the only true GOD a Temple or Church, which they dedicated to the Memory of the Holy Mother of

of GOD, and perpetual Virgin *Mary*, the Walls whereof were on all ſides made of Rods, watled or interwoven. In this the Fervor and Piety of our primitive *Chriſtians* was ſo great, that it was deſervedly called *the Mother of Saints*. The Memory of this Building was preſerved by an Inſcription cut in Braſs, and heretofore faſtned to a Pillar in *Glaſtenbury* Church, which, being rehearſed by *Biſhop Godwyn*, Sir *Henry Spelman* cauſed to be entirely tranſcribed, and put into his Collection of *Britiſh* and *Engliſh* Councels. To this their Solitude did St. *Joſeph* and his Companions frequently repair, both to repoſe themſeves after their Labors, and by undiſtracted Prayers to renew their Courage and Patience in their Apoſtolical Employment, laying thus the Foundation, and giving Example both of Active and Contemplative Life. Here did St. *Joſeph* after neer twenty years painful Labors change this mortal Life for an immortal one in the Year of our Lord 82. With him are ſaid to have been buried two Silver Veſſels, which he had brought along with him, filled with the precious

Blood of our Saviour JESUS CHRIST.

The Faith, thus planted by theſe Holy Apoſtles, daily here encreaſing, the *Britiſh Chriſtians* are ſaid in the Year of our Lord 100. to have ſent an Ambaſſadour to St. *Clement*, then Biſhop of *Rome*, deſiring him to communicate to them the Rites and Order of celebrating Divine Service.

About the latter end of *Trajans* Reign, the *Roman* Biſhop St. *Evariſtus*, ſending a Meſſage to the *Britains*, exhorted them to the *Chriſtian* Faith: The verities whereof the better to propagate, his Succeſſor St. *Alexander* ſent hither certain Apoſtolical Preachers, amongſt whom are thought to have been St. *Marcellus*, afterwards Biſhop of *Triers*, and St. *Timotheus*, Son of *Pudens* a *Roman* Senator, and Brother to the Holy Virgins St. *Praxedes* and St. *Pudentiana*, whoſe Mother is by many ſuppoſed to have been the Famous *Britiſh* Lady St. *Claudia*. Theſe gathered into a Flock the Remainders of thoſe, who had been converted by St. *Joſeph* of *Arimathea* and his Companions, confirming them in the ſame Faith, which, thus

thus watered, ſpread ſo far, that *Anno Domini* 141. there are ſaid to have been Baptized in *Granta* (ſince called **Cambridge**) nine Doctors and Scholars.

About the Year of the Lord 181. the *Britiſh* King *Lucius*, who had hitherto been kept by its Poverty and want of Worldly Splendor from embracing the *Chriſtian* Religion, to a Liking whereof an Account of the conſtant Perſeverance of the *Chriſtians* at *Rome* amidſt their great and horrible Perſecutions had induced him, being now by the Emperors Lieutenants *Pertinax* and *Trebellius* informed of the Favor, ſhewn to the Profeſſors of *Chriſtianity* by the Emperor *Marcus Aurelius*, who, having obtained a famous Victory by the *Chriſtians* Prayers, ſet forth an Edict in their behalf, as alſo of the Increaſe of their Number by the Converſion of many of the chiefeſt *Roman* Senators, began to hearken to the Admonitions of ſuch, as taught that Religion here in *Britain*, the Fountain whereof underſtanding to be at *Rome*, and not knowing of any Eccleſiaſtical perſons in *Britain* of Au-

Converſion of King *Lucius*.

thority ſufficient to eſtabliſh here a New Church, ſent *Elvanus* of *Avallonia*, and *Medwinus* of the Province of the *Belgæ* with Letters to St. *Eleutherius*, then ſitting in St. *Peters* Chair, deſiring from him more perfect Inſtruction, and a greater Authority for ſetling the common Affairs of *Chriſtianity*. St. *Eleutherius*, together with the ſame Meſſengers, one of which (to wit *Elvanus*) he is ſaid to have conſecrated a Biſhop, ſent over to him two Reverend Prelates, whoſe Names were *Phaganus* and *Diruvianus*, commiſſionating them not only to inſtruct and Baptize the King, and ſuch others, as ſhould embrace the *Chriſtian* Faith, but alſo to order and eſtabliſh all Eccleſiaſtical Affairs in the Kingdom. But whereas the King deſired, that his Meſſengers might bring with them the *Roman* Laws, according to which he would order the Civil State of his Kingdom, the holy Biſhop ſent him word, that thoſe Laws were not neceſſary for the Conſtitution of a *Chriſtian* Common-Weal, ſince that in them many things were eſtabliſhed, that ought not to be obſerved by the Profeſſors of *Chriſtianity*. Theſe

Theſe Meſſengers being arrived, the King, his Queen, his Siſter St. *Emerita*, and his whole Family were waſht in the Laver of Baptiſm, whoſe good Example a great number of his People ſoon followed. A Teſtimonial of this Converſion is yet remaining in the Library of Sir *John Cotton*, being a Coin of this King, bearing his Image, his Name *LUC*, and the Sacred Sign of the Croſs, the common Badge of *Chriſtianity*.

This done, theſe four holy Men employd themſelves in Preaching the Goſpel of CHRIST through all the Provinces of the Kingdom, diſputing daily with the *Druids*, and by the help of the Kings Authority and Zeal abrogating their abominable Superſtitions, whoſe horrid Sacrifices of humane Blood had cauſed the *Romans* long ſince to prohibit them in *Gaul*, and conſecrating Prieſts and Biſhops, and deſigning for Epiſcopal Sees thoſe Places, where formerly the chief of the *Druids*, whom by a Title, borrowed from the *Romans*, our Hiſtorians, writing in *Latin*, frequently term *Flamines* and *Archiflamines*, had their Reſidence. The Names of the

Cities, that were then in *Britain*, compaſſed with Walls, and fortified with Towers and Gates, for each of which a Biſhop was intended, are as followeth.

1. *Cair Guintwick*, now **Wintwick** in *Lancaſhire*.

2. *Cair Mincip*, **Verolam** near *St. Albans*.

3. *Cair Liqualid*, now **Carliſle**.

4. *Cair Meguaid*, now **Meivod** in *Montgomeryſhire*.

5. *Cair Colun*, now **Colcheſter**.

6. *Cair Ebranc*, now **York**.

7. *Cair Seiont*, afterwards *Cair Cuſteint*, near **Carnarvon**.

8. *Cair Caradoc* in the Borders of *Shropſhire*.

9. *Cair Grant*, now **Cambridge**.

10. *Cair Maunguid*, now **Manchester** in *Lancaſhire*.

11. *Cair Lundein*, now **London**.

12. *Cair Guorthigirn* in *Radnorſhire*.

13. *Cair*

13. *Cair Ceint*, now **Canterbury**.

14. *Cair Guiragon*, now **Worceſter**.

15. *Cair Peris*, now **Portſmouth**.

16. *Cair Daun*, now **Doncaſter** in *Yorkſhire*.

17. *Cair-Legio*, now **Weſtcheſter**.

18. *Cair Guricon*, now **Warwick**.

19. *Cair Segeint*, now **Silceſter** in *Hampſhire*.

20. *Cair-Leon* on *Uſk* in *Monmouthſhire*, now quite demoliſhed.

21. *Cair Guent*, now **Winchester**.

22. *Cair Britto*, now **Briſtol**.

23. *Cair Lerion*, now **Leiceſter**.

24. *Cair Draiton*, now **Draiton** *in Shropſhire*.

25. *Cair Pentavelcoit*, now **Ilcheſter** in *Somerſetſhire*.

26. *Cair Urvac*, now **Worceſter** in *Shropſhire*.

27. *Cair Calemion*, now **Camelet** in *Somerſetſhire*.

28. *Cair Lindcoit*, now **Lincoln**.

Three of theſe were deſigned to be Metropolitical Cities, the Title of Archbiſhops not being then in uſe, viz. *London*, *York*, and *Cairleon* upon *Usk*: the firſt whereof was *York*, being at that time not only a Colony of the *Romans*, but the Place, where the Emperours Palace and Courts of Judicature were kept. The firſt Metropolitan of *London* was St. *Theanus*, for whom the King built a Church in the place called *Cornhil*, which was conſecrated to St. *Peter*.

In the Year of CHRIST 186. the holy Prelates *Phaganus* and *Diruvianus*, going to *Rome*, obtained a Confirmation of all, they had done in *Britain*, from St. *Eleutherius*, from whom at their Return hither they preſented the King with an hallowed Crown.

Theſe Holy men being now come back, there were more Churches built, particu-

particularly that of *Weſtminſter*, which which was even from its firſt Foundation deputed for the Burial of our Kings, and that of *Wincheſter*, to which the King granted great Immunities, ſetling on it ample Revennes, and placing therein Monks, living according to the Rule, delivered by St. *Mark* the Evangeliſt.

Nor was the Devotion of King *Lucius* content only to build Churches and Monaſteries, but he erected alſo Seminaries of Learning, of which that of *Bangor* was moſt remarkable, wherein at the coming of St. *Auguſtin* into *England* there were more than two thouſand Monks.

Chriſtian Religion being thus ſetled in *Britain*, King *Lucius*, out of his Zeal to propagate the Goſpel, is ſaid to have relinquiſhed his Crown, and paſſed over into *Bavaria* and *Rhætia*, together with his Siſter St. *Emerita*, where being Crowned with Martyrdom, he was buried at *Curia* or *Chur*: after whoſe Death the *Romans* ſuffered no more *Britiſh* Kings within their Province.

St. *Phaganus* and *Diruvianus*, travelling over the whole Iſland, teaching

and baptizing the Inhabitants, viſited the Iſle of *Avallonia*, where they built another Oratory, dedicated to St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*, and having eſtabliſhed there a Succeſſion of twelve perſons in memory of St. *Joſeph* and his Companions, are ſuppoſed there to have ended their Dayes, *Anno Domini* 191.

Perſecution under *Dioclesian.*

The *Chriſtian* Faith, thus ſetled in *Britain*, flouriſhed here, unmoleſted by any Perſecution till the Year of our Lord 286. when *Diocleſian*, being now in the third year of his Reign, took for his Companion in the Empire *Marcus Valerius Maximianus*. Theſe two Emperors, the former whereof aſſumed the Surname *Jovius*, as the other did *Herculius*, deſigning wholly to extirpate *Chriſtianity* out of the World, raiſed a more diſmal Perſecution againſt the Profeſſors thereof, than ever any of their Predeceſſors had done, and this their ſupereminent Cruelty they extended ſo far, that the Iſle of *Britain*, which in former perſecuting Emperors times had been exempted from participating with the Sufferings of other Nations,

tions, was now made a Scene of Blood, and the very firſt Theatre, whereon theſe bloody Emperours began to Act thoſe Tragedies, whereat Mankind ſtood amazed.

The firſt, that ſuffered under their cruel Edicts, was our glorious Protomartyr St. *Albanus*, who, being an Inhabitant of *Verulam*, deſcended of an illuſtrious *Roman* Family, and the Emperors Procurator in *Britain*, courteouſly (tho himſelf yet a *Pagan*) entertained a certain reverend *Chriſtian* Prieſt, named *Amphibalus*, then newly come from *Rome* into *Britain*, by whom being converted to the true Faith, he lent him at his departure his own Military Caſlock, woven with Gold, that he might the better eſcape: for which being accuſed before the Judge, conſtituted for that purpoſe, and owning himſelf a *Chriſtian*, he was after various Torments beheaded, the Executioners Eyes falling to the Ground with the Martyrs Head. To his Honour after the ceaſing of the Perſecution were ſeveral Churches erected, one particularly in the Place, where by ſhedding his Blood he had triumphed: Which St. *Germanus* Biſhop

ſhop of *Auxerre* in *France*, viſiting, that he might here pay his thanks to GOD, for his Victory over the *Pelagian* Hereſy, took from the Place, where the Martyrs Blood had been ſhed, a Lump of Earth, which he carried with him into *France*. This no doubt occaſioned the Miſtake of thoſe, who affirmed the Body of St. *Alban* to have been carried hence into *France* by St. *Germanus*.

Not long after St. *Amphibalus*, taken among the *Cornabii*, where a great Multitude of People were, as they attended to his Preaching, ſlain by the *Pagans*, was brought to *Rudburn*, a Village three Miles from *Verulam*, where his Belly being ript open, and his Guts faſtned to a Stake, ſet in the Ground, he was by cruel whipping forced to walk about it, enwrapping it with his Bowels, his Body likewiſe being torn with Knives and Lances, till at laſt he yielded up his Soul to GOD: After which his Body was by a certain *Chriſtian* privately taken away, and buried.

Many more were here likewiſe Crowned with Martyrdom, two of the moſt remarkable whereof were St.

St. *Aaron* and St. *Julius*, conſiderable Citizens of *Caer-Leon* upon *Uſk*.

Beſides thoſe, who ſuffered Martyrdom, many perſecuted *Chriſtians*, which were left, hid themſelves in Woods, Deſarts, and Caves of Rocks, expecting from GOD, the juſt Judge of all, when he would pleaſe to execute his Judgments on their Perſecutors, and reſtore Safety and Liberty to their own Souls.

The *Britiſh Chriſtians* thus abſconding, the Rage of their Enemies extended it ſelf upon their Churches, all which by this Tempeſt were either utterly deſtroyed, or turned into places for the Idolatrous Worſhip of the *Gentiles*, as that of *Weſtminſter* was into a Temple of *Apollo*, ſo that in ſeveral Provinces of this Iſland there remained no Marks at all of *Chriſtian* Religion.

Tho the *Britains* for about nine years groaned under this Perſecution, yet it was ſooner mitigated here, than in any other part of the Empire. For *Conſtantius Chlorus*, who by the vertuous demeanor of his Wife *Helena*, a *Chriſtian* Lady, Daughter to *Coilus* a *Britiſh* Prince, had been brought

brought to a ſecret Liking of their Religion, being by *Maximian*, who, conſtraining him to divorce *Helena*, had given him his Daughter to Wife, choſen *Cæſar*, as *Galerius* was by *Diocleſian*, came into *Britain* to ſubdue the Uſurper *Alectus*, where he put a ſtop to this Iſſue of Blood, ſo that, the *Britiſh* Church enjoying Peace, whilſt in all other Provinces of the Empire Cruelty and Slaughter were Triumphant, the *Chriſtians* here began to repair their demoliſhed Churches, to build new ones in honour of their late Martyrs, and Publickly to celebrate Divine Myſteries and ſolemn Feſtivals.

Maximian and *Diocleſian* after twenty years fruitleſs Cruelty voluntarily depoſing themſelves from the Empire, the Weſtern Provinces fell to *Conſtantius*, who, chooſing rather to govern well, than much, reſigned *Italy* and *Africk* to *Galerius*, eſteeming them too remote from the Seat of his Reſidence, which he held in *Britain*: Into the Northern parts whereof he was drawn by ſome Commotions amongſt the *Picts*, whom having removed beyond the Limits preſcribed them,

them, he fell ſick at *York*, where, having embraced the true Faith, he piouſly ended his dayes, *Anno CHRISTI* 306. leaving his Empire to his eldeſt Son *Conſtantin*, born in *Britain* of his beloved Wife *Helena*, by whom he was ſolemnly buried.

Conſtantin, who (tho flying from it) was forced to yield to the Souldiers, ſaluting him Emperor, altho not yet a *Chriſtian*, yet having from his Infancy been bred up to the Love of *Chriſtians*, and imbued by his Mother with the Principles of their Religion in his tender Youth, indulged them the ſame Peace and Security through all his Dominions, and particulary in *Britain*, as they had enjoyed under his Father *Conſtantius*. Hence ſeveral Churches were rebuilt and repleniſhed within this Iſland: whereof two of the moſt famous were thoſe of *Wincheſter* and *Abingdon*, to the latter of which belonged no fewer than five hundred Monks living by the Labour of their Hands in Woods and Deſarts, and reſorting every Sunday and Holyday to the Monaſtery to perform their Devotions: beſides whom there con-

Chriſtianity reſtored by *Conſtantin.*

conſtantly remained there ſixty, daily attending to celebrate Divine Service.

In the Year of our Lord 311. *Galerius* being dead, there remained in the Empire four Perſons, by whom the reſpective Provinces were ſupremely and independently adminiſtred: *Gaul* and *Britain* by *Conſtantin*; *Italy* and *Africk* by *Maxentius*; the *Eaſt* by *Maximinus*; *Pannonia*, *Greece*, *Illyricum* and *Thrace* by *Licinius*. Whereof *Maxentius*, under whoſe Tyranny all *Italy* (eſpecially *Rome*) groaned, refuſing Conditions of Peace, offered him by *Conſtantin*, whom he would not admit into fellowſhip in the Empire, *Conſtantin*, concluding a War againſt him to be both juſt and neceſſary, and ſenſible, that his Adverſary was ſuperior to him in ſtrength, had recourſe to Divine Aſſiſtance, and uncertain amongſt ſuch a Multitude of Gods, to which he ſhould addreſs himſelf, calling to mind, how former Emperors had to their own Ruine been abuſed by the deceitful Oracles of their falſe Gods, reſolved to put his Truſt in the only true GOD, worſhipped by his Mother *Helena* all her Life-time, and by his Father *Conſtantius* towards his

his latter end, to whom when he had offered up his Prayers, the Almighty was pleaſed by a ſtupendious Miracle in the ſight of his whole Army to declare, how acceptable this was to him. For the Emperor ſaw manifeſtly in the Heavens over the Sun, which had now paſſed his Meridian, and began to decline, the Sign of the the Croſs, figured by a reſplendent Light, together with theſe Words inſcribed, Ἐν τούτῳ νίκα: Which Spectacle cauſed great Admiration in himſelf, and his whole Army, then attending.

To *Conſtantin*, diſtracted with great Doubts about the Portent of this Viſion, did our Lord, bearing the ſame ſign, which had been ſhewn him from Heaven, appear in his ſleep, commanding him to cauſe a Repreſentation thereof to be framed, which he ſhould make uſe of, as a firm Guard, whenſoever he was to joyn Battle with his Enemies.

The Day appearing, the Emperor, having declared this Viſion to his Friends, called together the moſt skilful Jewellers, that could be found, to whom having deſcribed the Pattern of the Sign, which he had ſeen, he com-

commanded them to make the Reſemblance thereof in Gold and Precious Stones, which he alwayes made uſe of, as a ſure Defence againſt all hoſtil Violence.

Conſtantin, encouraged with this glorious Teſtimony of Divine Aſſiſtance, armed with the Croſs both on his Helmet and Forehead, and having this Triumphant Banner (to which the *Roman* Eagle now gave place) born before his Army, paſſed the *Alps*, and coming into *Italy*, fought *Maxentius* before the Walls of *Rome*, whoſe Army being diſcomfited, the *Tyrant*, having caſt off his Marks of Authority, adventured himſelf to the River *Tyber*, where he was drowned.

Soon after *Conſtantin* met *Licinius* at *Milan*, to whom giving his Siſter *Conſtantia* for Wife, he prevailed with him not only to ſubſcribe to an Edict for giving free Liberty to *Chriſtians*, and reſtoring to them all their Churches, that had been ſeiſed on, but alſo to joyn with him in a Letter to *Maximinus*, Emperor of the Eaſtern Provinces, to grant the ſame Freedom within his Dominions, to which *Maximinus*, tho with ſome unwillingneſs, conſented. In

In the Year 314. *Conſtantin*, then reſiding in *Gaul*, was much diſtracted by the Factions of Schiſmaticks amongſt the *Chriſtians*. For the repreſſing therefore of the Seditions, raiſed by the *Donatiſts*, he was neceſſitated to command a General Aſſembly or Synod of the Weſtern Empire to meet at *Arles*, where there were preſent above two hundred Biſhops: amongſt whom were theſe three from *Britain*, *Eborius* Biſhop of *York*, *Reſtitutus* Biſhop of *London*, and *Adelfius* Biſhop of *Colonia Londinenſium* or **Colcheſter**, which ſome, affirming *Colon: Londinenſ*: to have been miſtakingly written by the Tranſcribers for *Colon*: *Camalodun*: interpret **Maldon** in *Eſſex*.

In the Year 317. *Licinius*, contrary to his Covenant with *Conſtantin*, beginning to preſecute the *Chriſtians*, was by him in two Battles overthrown. After which tho there was a new League made, and all the Eaſtern Provinces together with *Thrace* aſſigned to *Licinius*; yet he, renewing the War, was ſlain the next year, and a firm Peace given to the *Chriſtian* Churches all the World over.

Now

Now began *Conſtantin* to publiſh Laws for the advantage of *Chriſtianity*, ordaining, that Clergymen ſhould be excuſed from all manner of Civil Offices and Duties, to the end they might not by the envious Malice of any be withdrawn from the Service of GOD. For to encourage likewiſe the Love of Virginity and Single Life, he abrogated the *Roman* Laws againſt Celibacy, and appointed a certain Meaſure of Wheat yearly to be given to all Widows, and thoſe, who obſerved a Virgin Life. He ordained alſo, that all Judges, Inhabitants of Cities, and Tradeſmen ſhould reſt on the Venerable Day of our Lord; but Countrymen were permitted to employ themſelves in cultivating their Grounds, becauſe that, many times no Day being more commodious for plowing or digging the Vines, a common Good, granted by Divine Povidence, ought not to be loſt. He preſcribed likewiſe a Form of Prayer, to be uſed upon all Sundayes both by Citizens and others.

In the Year of our Lord 324. *Conſtantin*, who, according to a Cuſtom, frequently practiced by the *Chriſtian* Converts

Converts of thoſe primitive Times, had hitherto delayed his Baptiſm, to cleanſe his Conſcience, ſtained with the Blood of many Innocents, amongſt whom was his own Son *Criſpus*, put to Death upon the falſe Accuſations of his Stepmother *Fauſta*, was waſht in the Laver of Regeneration, being Baptized at *Rome* by the Holy Biſhop *Sylveſter*, and while he was yet in his white Robes, then uſually worn for ſeven Dayes after Baptiſm, made ſeveral Laws for the advancement of true Religion.

1. He declared that CHRIST was the only true Lord, and commanded, that he ſhould be adored throughout the whole Empire.

2. He appointed ſevere Puniſhments to be inflicted on thoſe, who by word or deed ſhould diſhonor him.

3. He ordained likewiſe Penalties for thoſe, who ſhould perſecute or moleſt any *Chriſtians*. He gave alſo Imperial Priviledges to the *Roman*, and great Immunities to all other Churches, and conferred many Gifts upon ſeveral Eccleſiaſtical Perſons.

The year following, to ſuppreſs the Hereſy of *Arius*, he cauſed a Council to

to be assembled at *Nice* of three hundred and eighteen Bishops, where a Decree was likewise made for an Uniformity in the Observation of *Easter*, about which the Church had been much disquieted. Hereunto agreed those of the Church Κατὰ τὰς Βριττανίας.

In the Year 326. died St. *Helena*, Mother to the Emperor, who, with great Care and Industry having found out the Cross, whereon our Blessed Saviour suffered, and the Manger, wherein he was born, built in the same place a Church, dedicated to *Christian* Devotion, for which she was by the *Jews*, Enemies to all, that own any thing sacred in Memory of our Saviour, despitefully called *Stabularia*. About the same time *Constantin*, returning into the East, exprest his Zeal against Idolatry, shutting up the Temples of the Heathens, and making severe Laws against their Sacrifices.

Dash pargo. for Inst.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the quitting of Britain *by the* Romans: *The State thereof after their departure.*

IN this Iſland did the *Roman* Government continue till the time of the Emperor *Honorius*, in the fifteenth year of whoſe Reign, being the Yeer of our *Lord* 410. and four hundred ſixty and two yeers after the firſt Arrival of *Julius Cæſar* on the *Britiſh* ſhore, the *Britains*, the Flower of whoſe Youth had been from time to time drawn out by the *Romans*, whoſe Forces alſo were now called from hence for the defence of *Italy* againſt the *Goths*, not having Power ſufficient to defend themſelves from the Incurſions of their Northern Enemies, ſent their Meſſengers to the Emperor, humbly craving his Protection. But he, not able to afford them any Aſſiſtance, *Rome* it ſelf being then beſieged by *Alaric*, by whom it was the ſame year taken, ſent them Letters, exhorting them to ſtand on their own Guard, and acquitting them of the *Roman* Juriſdiction. *Britain quitted by the Romans.*

The

State thereof after their Departure.

The *Romans* thus relinquiſhing all Care and Protection of *Britain*, the Government devolved on its own petty Princes, who independently ruled the ſeveral Provinces thereof. But they, unable to ſupport themſelves againſt the daily Inroads of the *Picts* and *Scots*, again ſent Letters to *Honorius*, who, compaſſionating their Miſeries, the Fear of *Alaric* being now over, ſent a Legion to their Aſſiſtance, who, having with great Slaughter driven back the *Picts* beyond the Marches, and cleared the Frontiers, cauſed a Rampire to be built croſs the Iſland from the Frith of *Edenborough* to the City *Alcluith* on *Dunbritton*, as *Agricola* formerly had done.

No ſooner were the *Romans* departed to the defence of *France*, but the *Picts*, breaking down this Wall, ſlightly caſt up of Turfs only, and pouring into the Province like a Torrent, laid all waſte, whereever they came, the *Scots* likewiſe out of their Carroghs or Leather veſſels, wherein they uſed to paſs the *Scitick* Vale, landing in whole Swarms, and making havock of whatever came in their way.

The

The *Britains*, thus bandied between two mercileſs and inſolent Enemies, yet once more ſent Ambaſſadors to *Rome*, who with rent Garments, and Sand on their Heads, mournfully ſupplicating *Valentinian* the third, then Emperor, that he would not ſuffer a Province, which had been ſo ſerviceable to the *Romans*, to be the Subject of *Barbarian* Scorn and Inſolence, excited in him ſuch Pity of their Complaints, that to ſuccor them he ſent certain Regiments, who, coming unexpectedly upon thoſe ravenous Spoilers, ſurpriſed them with terrible Slaughter.

The *Britains* thus reſcued, and the Province cleared of the Enemies, the *Romans* gave them their help to build another Wall of Stone, twelve foot high, and eight broad, traverſing the Iſland in a direct Line from Eaſt to Weſt, where *Severus* had walled before, between certain Cities, placed as Frontiers to keep off the Enemy, and along the South Shore, from whence Hoſtility was alſo feared, they erected Towers at certain diſtances for ſafety of the Coaſt.

This done, having inſtructed the *Britains* in the Art of War, leaving

themPatterns of their Arms and Weapons, and exhorting them manfully to reſiſt the Invaders of their Countrey, they took their laſt Farewel, never purpoſing to return.

The *Romans* being finally departed, and their Reſolution of not returning known, the *Scots* and *Picts*, more confidently than ever iſſuing out of their Holes, ſeized upon all the North part of the Iſland even as far as the Wall, which, not fearing to be diſpoſſeſt, they, as natural Inhabitants, planted and manured: Not content herewith, they aſſaulted the Garriſon on the Wall, whence with their Hooks and Engines pulling down ſome, they put the reſt to flight, themſelves taking poſſeſſion of the Frontier Cities, and having with ſuch eaſe broken into the Province, purſued the *Britains* into the Inland Countreys, bringing deſtruction ſtill along with them.

The better to withſtand the frequent Inroads of theſe cruel Enemies, the Princes, after the example of their Anceſtors in the dayes of *Julius Cæſar*, reſolved to chooſe a General Captain of the whole Nation, and to eſtabliſh the Kingdom in his Line.

For

For this high Dignity there were two conſiderable Competitors: *Aurelius Ambroſius*, deſcended of a noble *Roman* Family, and (as it is ſuppoſed) Son of *Conſtantin*, who in the dayes of *Honorius* pretended to the *Roman* Empire; and *Vortigern*, Prince of the *Damnonii*, or, as ſome write, Conſul of the *Geviſſei*, Inhabitants of the South-Weſtern parts about *Cornwal* or *South-Wales*: Which Principality, it ſeems, he had governed well enough to be eſteemed not unworthy to be preferred above his formerly Fellow-Princes.

Ambroſius therefore, with his Brother *Uter Pendragon*, retiring into leſſer *Britain* in *Gaul*, quitted both his Pretence and Country to *Vortigern*, who, the Choice thus falling on him, was in the Year 438 anointed King: For, that in thoſe ancient times of *Britiſh* Government the ſolemn Ceremony of anointing their Kings was in uſe in this Iſland, is clear from the Teſtimony of *Gildas*.

Vortigern, thus advanced to the Throne, governed a while his Principality with Moderation. In the eighth year of his Reign the *Picts*,

who after their miraculous Diſcomfiture by St. *Germanus* had for the moſt part kept within their own Territories, now breaking in afreſh, miſerably waſted all thoſe Provinces of *Britain*, which had formerly been ſubject to the *Romans*: and this Invaſion they continued the year following with ſuch violence, that after much Bloodſhed, and horrible Devaſtation of the Countrey, the *Britains*, having no other Refuge, wrote to *Ætius*, then Preſident of *Gallia*, this ſhort, but lamentable, Epiſtle, recorded by *Gildas*.

To Ætius, **the third time Conſul, the Groans of the** Britains.

The Barbarians *drive us to the Sea, the Sea beats us back upon the* Barbarians. *Between theſe two we are expoſed either to be ſlain with the Sword, or drowned: and to avoid both we find no Remedy.*

But in vain were theſe Supplications, the *Romans*, who could ſcarce ſecure the heart of their Empire, infeſted with the *Huns* and *Vandals*, not being able to afford them any aſſiſtance. Many therefore of the *Britains*, ſeeing themſelves thus rejected, wearied with

with flying from place to place, and ſpent with the terrible Famin, which had long afflicted them, yielded themſelves Slaves to their Savage Enemies; but others, more reſolute, taught by their Miſeries to ſeek aid from Heaven, retired to inacceſſible Mountains and Caves, whence with Courage and Succeſs they often aſſaulted theſe ravenous Spoilers, recovering from them their Booty, and driving them back to their own Quarters.

Theſe hoſtil Invaſions therefore a while ceaſing, the *Britains* ſet themſelves to cultivate their Ground, which with ſcarce credible Plenty abundantly recompenced their Labors.

No ſooner were their Enemies departed, and their pinching Hunger allaid, but their Piety likewiſe vaniſhed, in the room whereof ſucceeded exceſſive Luxury, accompanied with all ſorts of Vices, infecting not the Laity only, but the Clergy alſo, who ought to have been Guides to others. And altho GOD ſought to reclaim them by his Scourge of Peſtilence, by which ſuch Multitudes periſhed, that the Living were not ſufficient to bury the Dead; yet were they with this

Severity nothing at all amended, but like *Solomons* Fool, tho ſcourged, yet they felt it not.

GODs Patience therefore being ſpent towards a People, which grew worſe both by Proſperity and Adverſity, he ſo far infatuated their Counſels, that they themſelves invited from a remote Country Enemies, far more ſavage and barbarous than either the *Picts* or *Scots*.

The Northern Spoilers, whom fear of the Contagion had kept within their own Borders, the Infection now beginning to ceaſe, readvanced into the Inland Countrey, againſt whoſe Incurſions the better to provide, King *Vortigern* ſummoned a general Councel, where by common Advice it was reſolved, that Ambaſſadors ſhould be ſent into *Germany* to hire the *Saxons* to their aſſiſtance: an Army of which in the year 449 landing in *Britain* under the Conduct of *Hengiſt* and *Horſa*, the *Britains*, by their Help overcoming their Enemies, who were come as far as *Stamford* in *Lincolnſhire*, gave them great Poſſeſſions in that part of the ſame County, now called *Lindſey*, where they built *Thong-Caſtle*.

King

King *Vortigern*, falling in love with *Rowena*, Daughter to *Hengiſt*, divorced his Queen, a vertuous Lady, by whom he had three Sons, named *Vortimer*, *Catigern*, and *Paſcentius*, to make his Bed vacant for this *Pagan*, whom he bought of her Father with the Kingdom of *Kent*: who ſoon after, taking advantage at the Diſcontent of the *Britains* for this Act of their King, pickt a Quarrel, and making a League with the *Picts*, laid waſt the Countrey.

The *Saxons* Power increaſing by the coming over of freſh Supplies, the *Britiſh* Laity firſt, and afterwards the Clergy repreſented their Danger to the King, whom, either not believing, or not regarding their Complaints, they in the ſixteenth year of his Reign deſerted, and followed his Son *Vortimer* (chooſing him, as ſome ſay, for their General, or, as others, for an Aſſociate to his Father in the Kingdom) under whoſe Conduct they had many Conflicts with the *Saxons*, and that with various Succeſs: in one of which, the Vant-guard being led by *Aurelius Ambroſius*, newly come out of Little *Britain* to aſſiſt Prince

Vortimer, the main Body by *Vortimer* himſelf, and the Rere by his Brother *Catigern*, *Catigern* was ſlain, and buried at *Aleſtrew*, now called Aylesford in *Kent*, where a Monument erected for him, is at this day corruptly called *Keith-Coty-Houſe*.

This Proceeding of the *Britains* (tho the more excuſeable, in that they did not preſume to depoſe their King, which yet *Parker* in his Antiquities of the *Britiſh* Church not only affirms they did, but (like a true *Calviniſt*) commends them for ſo doing; but only without, or (perhaps) againſt his Conſent choſe themſelves a Leader againſt their Enemies) as it was not juſtifiable, nor yet approved by all the *Britains*, many of which took not well this advancing of the Son againſt the good Liking of the Father: ſo was it fatal to *Vortimer* himſelf, who, having ſix years enjoyed this Dignity, loſt both that and his Life, being poyſoned by the Procurement of *Rowena*. After his Death *Ambroſius* returned again into *Britain* in *France*.

Hengiſt and his *Saxons*, who under Pretence of a Treaty of Peace had ſlain

ſlain three hundred of the *Britiſh* Nobility, and by detaining *Vortigern* Priſoner had extorted from him the Counties of *Eſſex*, *Suſſex*, *Surrey*, *Norfolk*, and *Suffolk* for his Ranſom, growing daily more and more powerful, whilſt *Vortigern* lurkt ingloriouſly in his Caſtle *Genereu* amidſt the inacceſſible Mountains of the Countrey, now called *Cambria* or *Wales*, and the middle Provinces of the Realm, left without any Defender, being expoſed to the fury of the Enemy, the *Britains*, deſerted by their King, were forced to ſeek one abroad.

They directed therefore Meſſengers into Little *Britain* to *Ambroſius* and his Brother *Uter Pendragon*, beſeeching them with all ſpeed to quit that Country, and repair into their own, to the end that expelling both the *Saxons*, and their hated King *Vortigern*, they might receive the Crown of *Britain*.

The Princes upon this Invitation returned, attended with Ships, and armed Souldiers, and being arrived here, had a great Battel with *Hengiſt*, wherein tho the *Britains* were

worſted, yet the *Saxons* received ſuch Loſs, that they both gladly continued quiet. The Fury of the *Saxons* thus allayed, *Ambroſius* marched into *Wales*, where ſetting fire to the Caſtle of King *Vortigern*, he conſumed both him and his to Aſhes: After whoſe Death by Conſent of the Nobles he aſſumed the Crown *Anno CHRISTI* 481.

In the Year of our Lord 496. *Paſcentius*, the Son of *Vortigern*, with an Army of *Germans* came againſt *Ambroſius*, by whom being diſcomfited, he fled into *Scotland*: Whence about five years after returning with an Army, and underſtanding, that *Ambroſius* lay ſick, he hired a certain *Saxon*, named *Copa*, who, feigning himſelf to be a *Britiſh* Monk and a Phyſician, poyſoned the King, *Paſcentius* in the mean time and all his Captaines being ſlain by *Uter Pendragon*, who in the head of the Kings Forces marched out againſt him.

The Line of *Vortigern* being thus extinct, and *Ambroſius* now dead, the Realm was without any Competitor governed by *Uter Pendragon*, under whom and his Succeſſors the *Britains* had

had continual Struglings with the *Saxons*, by whom being at laſt outed of the beſt part of their Country, they retired beyond the River *Severn*, and in thoſe parts fortified themſelves, a Period being put to the *Britiſh* Kingdom in the Year of our Lord, 688. about two hundred ſeventy eight years after that *Honorius* had by Letters of Diſcharge quitted the *Britains* of the *Roman* Juriſdiction, two hundred and fifty from the Reeſtabliſhing of the *Britiſh* Monarchy by the Election of King *Vortigern*, two hundred thirty nine after the firſt Arrival of *Hengiſt* and his *Saxon* Auxiliaries, and in the third Year of *Cadwalladar*, who was the laſt, that was dignified with the Title of King of *Britain*, his Succeſſors being ſtiled Kings and Princes of *Wales*.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Of the Reſtauration of the Britiſh *Monarchy by King* James: *His Deſcent from* Cadwalladar.

The *Britiſh* Monarchy reſtored by King *James.*

THe conquering *Saxons*, having poſſeſt themſelves of all the Southern parts of the Iſle, except what lies beyond the *Severn*, and the mountainous Countrey of *Cornwall*, whither they had forced the *Britains* to retire, gave to the Countrey, held by themſelves, firſt the Name of *Eaſt Saxony beyond Sea*, and afterwards that of *England*: That Part of the Iſland, which was ſtill enjoyed by the *Britains*, they called *Wales*, the Inhabitants *Walſh* or *Welſh*-men, and their chief Governours Kings and Princes of *Wales*. Hereby was the Name of *Britain* baniſhed as it were the Iſland for above nine hundred years, till ſuch time as, the Line of *Henry* the VIIIth. (whoſe three Children, Reigning ſucceſſively, died Iſſueleſs) being extinct, the Crown of *England* by indubitable Hereditary Right fell to *James* the VIth. King of *Scotland*, whoſe

whoſe Great Grandmother was *Margaret*, eldeſt Daughter to *Henry* the VIIth. King of *England*. This famous Monarch (as is manifeſt by his Genealogy hereunto annext) lineally deſcending from *Cadwalladar*, the laſt King of the *Britains*, not only reſtored the *Britiſh* Line to the Throne, but the Name of *Britain* alſo to the Iſland, cauſing himſelf immediately upon his Coming to this Crown to be ſtiled King of *Great Britain*.

THE

The KINGS

Deſcent of King *James* fom *Cadwalladar.*

And Princes of *WALES*, from whom is Lineally deſcended the Royal Family of the *STUARTS*, now actually ſwaying the Scepter of *GREAT BRITAIN.*

CADWALLADAR

King of *Britain*, driven by the *Saxons* to forſake his Native Country, ſojourned with his Kinſman *Alan*, King of *Little Britain* in *France*, whence deſigning again for *Britain*, he was by an Angel admoniſhed in a Viſion to go to *Rome*, where he ended his dayes *Anno Domini* 688. With him died the *Britiſh* Monarchy.

Edwal Ywrch, left by his Father at his Departure for *Rome* in *Little Britain* with his Coſen *Alan*, who ſent his Son *Ivor* with a Navy into *Britain*, where he was the firſt King of *Wales.*

1. *Roderick Molwynoc*, who in the Year 720. ſucceeded his Coſen *Ivor*, the Son of *Alan*, in the Kingdom of *Wales.*

2. *Fermael*, who died without Iſſue in the Year 763.

RODE-

RODERICK MOLWYNOC, King of *Wales*, had Iſſue.

1. *Conan Tindaethwy*, King of *Wales*.

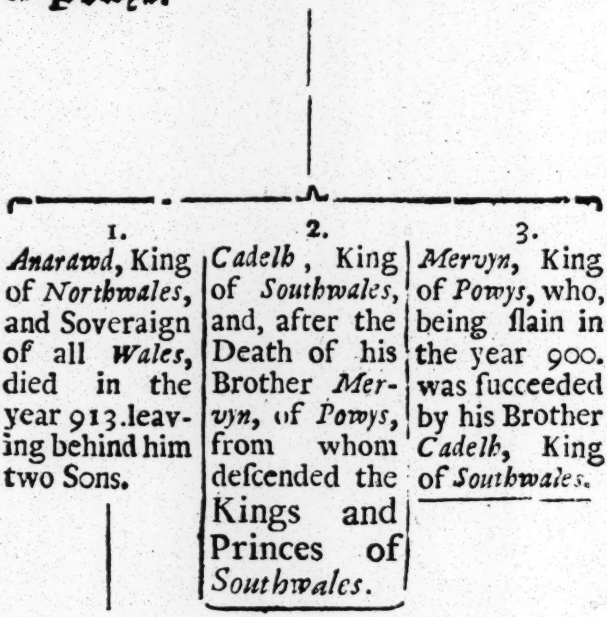
2. *Howel*, who, rebeling againſt his Brother, was by him overcome, and forced to fly into the Iſle of *Man*, where he died *Anno*. 819.

Eſylht, Queen of *Wales*, married to a Nobleman named *Mervyn Vrych*, deſcended in the right Line from *Belinus*, Brother of *Brennus*, King of *Britain*. His Mother was *Neſt*, Daughter to *Cadelh*, Prince of *Powys*, whoſe Father was *Brochwel Yſcithroc*, Prince of *Powys*, that in the Year 617. fought againſt the *Saxons* at *Bangor*.

1. *Roderick Mawr*, King of *Wales*, who by his Wife *Engharad*, Daughter to *Meyrick*, Prince of *Cardigan*, had a numerous Iſſue. He divided *Wales* into three *Talaiths* or Kingdoms: Giving to *Anarawd*, his Eldeſt Son (to whom the other two were Tributaries) *Gwyneth* or **Northwales**; to *Cadelh*, his ſecond Son, *Dehevbarth* or **Southwales**;

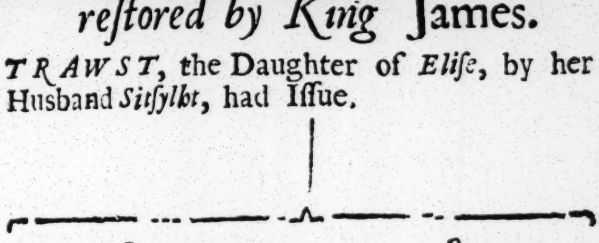
2. *Gwyriad*, who together with his Brother King *Roderick* was ſlain in the Year 877.

Wales; to *Mervyn*, his third Son, *Mathraval* or **Powys.**



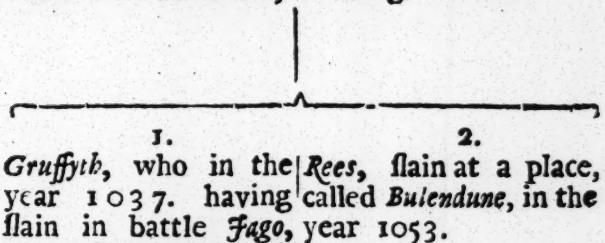
TRAWST

TRAWST, the Daughter of *Eliſe*, by her Husband *Sitſylht*, had Iſſue.



1. *Lhewelyn*, who married *Angharad*, the Daughter and Heir of *Meredyth*, King of *Southwales*. This *Lhewelyn* in the Year 1015. raiſed a great Power againſt *Ædan*, the Son of *Blegored*, who had uſurped the Kingdom of *Northwales*, whom with his four Sons having ſlain, he took to himſelf the Name and Authority of King of *Wales*.

2. *Conan*, ſlain with his Brother *Lhewelyn* in the year 1021.



1. *Gruffyth*, who in the year 1037. having ſlain in battle *Jago*, King of *Northwales*, aſſumed the Kingdom to himſelf.

2. *Rees*, ſlain at a place, called *Bulendune*, in the year 1053.

A Daughter, not named, married to *Fleance*, Son of *Bancho*, a *Scotch* Nobleman, cruelly murthered by *Mackbeth*, King of *Scotland*, whoſe Fury *Fleance* eſcaping, fled into *Wales*, where being kindly received by King *Gruffyth*, he privately married his Daughter, whereat the King, who by his Daughters being

ing

ing with Child had found out the Marriage, was ſo highly offended, that he cauſed *Fleance* to be kild, and his Daughter impriſoned, who was ſoon after delivered of a Son, which was named

Walter, who, going into *Scotland*, grew into ſuch Favor with King *Malcolm* the IIId. that he was by him made Lord High *Steward* of *Scotland*, receiving the Kings Revenues of the whole Realm, by the faithful Diſcharge of which Office, he merited for for himſelf and Poſterity the Surname of *Stuart*.

This was the Riſe and Original of the Royal Family of the *Stuarts*, which has now for above three hundred years been in poſſeſſion of the Crown of *Scotland*, and about fourſcore the ſole Monarchs of *Great Britain*. But tho this Deſcent be of the younger Houſe, as coming from *Eliſe*, ſecond Son of *Anarawd*, the firſt King of *Northwales*; yet that his preſent Majeſty of *Great Britain* is by Right of Primogeniture the next and undoubted Heir to *Cadwalladar*, will manifeſtly appear by the following Table, repreſenting

The

The Progeny

Of *Cadwalladar*, continued from *Edwal Voel*, the eldeſt Son of *Anarawd*, to our preſent Dread Soveraign King *CHARLES* the IId. now ſwaying the Scepter of *Great Britain*.

EDWAL VOEL

King of *Northwales*, and Sovereign of all *Wales*, eldeſt Son of *Anarawd*, firſt King of *Northwales*, and Grandſon of *Roderick Mawr*, King of *Wales*, had Iſſue.

1. *Meyric*, who was deprived of his Inheritance, firſt by his Coſen *Howel Dha*, the eldeſt Son of *Cadelh*, firſt King of *Southwales*, & afterwards by his own Brethren *Jevaf* and *Fago*. In the year 973. he had his Eyes put out by his Nephew *Howel*, the Son of *Jevaf*, and ſoon after died in Priſon, leaving behinde him two Sons.

2. *Jevaf*, who with his Brother *Fago* after the Death of *Howel Dha*, uſurped the Kingdom of *Northwales*, being the Right of their eldeſt Brother *Meyric*. About the year 967. he was Impriſoned by his Brother *Fago*, and in the year 973. ſet at liberty by his Son *Howel*, who chaſed *Fago* out of the Land, and took the Kingdom to himſelf.

3. *Fago*, who together with his Brother *Jevaf* in the year 948. after the Death of *Howel Dha*, uſurped the Kingdom of *Northwales*, which of right belonged to their elder Brother *Meyric*.

MEYRIC,

METRIC, the Son of *Edwal Voel*, had Iſſue.

1. *Jonaval*, who in the year 985. was ſlain by *Cadwalhon*, the Son of *Jevaf*, and left no Iſſue

2. *Edwal*, who in the year 992. recovered his Grandfathers Inheritance, and after ſix years was ſlain by *Swayn* King of *Denmark*.

Jago, who, being under Age at his Fathers Death, was deprived of his Inheritance by *Ædan* the Son of *Blegored*, ſlain in the year 1015. by *Lhewelyn*, the Son of *Sitſyht*, who being in the year 1021. kild by *Howel* and *Meredyth*, the Sons of *Edwyn*, *Jago* recovered his Kingdom, but was in the year 1037. ſlain by *Gruffyth*, the Son of *Lhewelyn*.

Conan, who, being by *Gruffyth ap Lhewelyn* driven out of his Inheritance, fled into *Ireland*, where he married the Daugher of *Alfred*, King of *Develyn*.

Gruffyth, who, in the year 1078. bringing a great Army of *Iriſhmen* and *Scots* into *Wales*, and joyning with *Rees ap Theodor*, the Heir of *Southwales*, recovered his Grandfathers Kingdom. He is the laſt, to whom the *Welſh* Hiſtorians give the Name of *King*.

GRUF-

GRUFFYTH, Son of *Conan*, had Iſſue.

Owen Gwyneth, Prince of *Northwales*, and Soveraign of all *VVales*. He died in the year 1169. leaving behind him a numerous Iſſue.

1.

Forwerth Drwyndwn, deprived of Inheritance by his younger Brother *David*.

Lhewelyn, Prince of *Northwales*, and Soveraign of all *VVales*, for his Heroick Acts ſurnamed the *Great*, who in the year 1237. being weakned by a Palſy, and vexed with the Rebellion of his Baſe Son *Gruffyth*, ſent Ambaſſadours to *Henry* the IIId. King of *England*, ſubmitting himſelf to his Protection, condeſcending to hold his Principality of him, and promiſing upon all Occaſions to aſſiſt him to the uttermoſt of his Power. He died in the year 1240.

2.

David, who, uſurping the Right of his eldeſt Brother, ſucceeded his Father in the Principality, which he held till the year 1194. when he loſt it to his Nephew *Lhewelyn*, the right Heir.

LHEWELYN, the Son of *Forwerth*, by his Wife *Jone*, Daughter to *John* King of *England*, had Issue.

David, Soveraign Prince of *VVales*, who submitted himself and his Principality to his Uncle *Henry* the IIId. King of *England*, doing him Homage and Fealty for the same. He died in the year 1246. without Issue.

Gladys Dhu a Daughter, married to *Ralph* Lord *Mortimer* of *Wigmor*, by whom she had Issue

Roger Mortimer, Lord of *VVigmor*, who ought to have succeeded his Uncle *David* in the Principality of *VVales*; but the *VVelsh* Nobility out of their Aversion to the *English*, not regarding his Right, did their Homage to *Lhewelyn* and *Owen Goch*, Sons of *Gruffyth*, Bastard-brother to the last Prince, who divided the Principality between them, till that *Lhewelyn* in the year 1254. having taken his Brother *Owen* Prisoner in battel, enjoyed alone the whole Principality. But in the year 1282, *Lhewelyn* being slain by one *Adam Francton* an *Englishman*, all *VVales* was by *Edward* the Ist. brought in Subjection to the Crown of *England*, and has so continued ever since. The Eldest Son of *Roger Mortimer* by his Wife *Maud*, Daughter of *VVilliam de Bruse* Lord of *Brechnoch*, was

Edmund Mortimer, Lord of *VVigmor*.

EDMUND

EDMUND MORTIMER, Lord of *VVigmor*, had Iſſue.

Roger Mortimer, Lord of *VVigmor*, who married *Jone*, Daughter and Heir of Sir *Peter Genivil*, was created Earl of *March* by King *Edward* the IIId. and afterwards attainted.

Edmund Mortimer, Lord of *VVigmor*, married *Elianor*, Widow of *VVilliam de Bohun*, Earl of *Northampton*, one of the Daughters and Heirs of *Bartholomew Badelſmer*, Lord of *Leeds* in *Kent*.

Roger Mortimer, Lord of *VVigmor*, reſtored by King *Edward* the IIId. to the Earldom of *March*, and all his Grandfathers Inheritance, Honors, and Poſſeſſions, the Attainder being repealed.

Edmund Mortimer, Earl of *March*, and Lord of *VVigmor*, married *Philippa*, Daughter and ſole Heir of *Leonell*, Duke of *Clarence*, in whoſe Right he was Earl of *Ulſter*. He died at *Cork* in *Ireland Anno* 1381.

EDMUND

EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of *March* had Issue

Roger Mortimer, Earl of *March* and *Ulster*, Lord of *Wigmor*, *Trym*, *Clare*, and *Connaght*, who married *Elianor*, Eldest Daughter and one of the Heirs of *Thomas Holland* Earl of *Kent*.

1.	2.	3.
Roger Mortimer died without Issue.	*Edmund Mortimer* died without Issue.	*Anne Mortimer*, married to *Richard Plantagenet*, Earl of *Cambridge*, by whom she had Issue

Richard Plantagenet, Duke of *York*, Earl of *Cambridge*, *March*, and *Ulster*.

Edward the IVth. King of *England* and *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*.

1.	2.	3.
Edward the Vth. King of *England* and *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*, murthered in the Tower left no Issue.	*Richard Plantagenet*, Duke of *York*, murthered with his Brother King *Edward*, left no Issue.	*Elizabeth*, eldest Daughter to *Edward* the IVth. married to *Henry* the VIIth. King of *England* and *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*.

ELIZA-

ELIZABETH, eldeſt Daughter to King *Edward* the IVth. by her Husband King *Henry* the VIIth. had Iſſue

1. *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*, died before his Father, and left no Iſſue.

2 *Henry* the VIIIth. King of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith.

3. *Margaret*, eldeſt Daughter to *Henry* the VIIth. married to *James* the IVth. King of *Scotland*, by whom ſhe had Iſſue

1. *Edward* the VIth. King of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*, died without Iſſue.

2. *Mary*, Q. of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*, died without Iſſue.

3. *Elizabeth*, Queen of *England*, *France* and *Ireland*, died without Iſſue.

James the Vth. King of *Scotland*.

Mary Queen of *Scotland*, who was by her Subjects, infected with *Calviniſm* (of which it is truly obſerved, that it never entred into any Country but by Rebellion) expelled

her Kingdom, and forced to fly for ſhelter into *England*, where (ſo implacable is *Presbyterian* Malice) they never left perſecuting her, till they had brought her (after eighteen years Impriſonment) to end her dayes upon a Scaffold. By her Husband *Henry* Lord *Darnley*, Son to *Mathew Stuart*, Earl of *Lenox*, ſhe had Iſſue

James the VIth. King of *Scotland*, who after the Deceaſe of *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*, as next Heir, enjoyed the Crown of this Realm, whereof he was no ſooner poſſeſt, but he reaſſumed the Title of *Great Britain*.

1. *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*, died before his Father, and left no Iſſue.

2. *CHARLES* the Ist. King of *Great Britain*, *France*, and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith, a Prince of incomparable Vertues and Endowments, who was on the 30th. of *January* 1648. barbarouſly and inhumanly murthered before the Gates of his own Royal Palace by a traitorous Crew of villanous Phanaticks, ſo ſecure in their own Thoughts of having thereby

3. *Elizabeth*, married to *Frederick*, Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, by whom ſhe had a numerous Iſſue.

by extirpated Monarchy out of this Iſland, that they inſolently ſet up on the *Royal Exchange* in the place, where his Statue (which they maliciouſly decollated) had been erected amongſt thoſe of his Predeceſſors, this Inſcription: *Exit Tyrannus, Regum ultimus.*

1.	2.	3.	4.
CHARLES the IId. by the Grace of God King of *Great Britain, France* and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith, now reigning. Whō GOD long preſerve.	The Illuſtrious Prince, *James* Duke of *York* and *Albany*.	*Mary*, Mother to the preſent Prince of *Orange*.	*Henrietta*, Mother to the preſent Queen of *Spain*.

CHAP. X.

Of the preſent Government of Great Britain *in general.*

OF *Monarchies* ſome are *Hereditary*, the Crown deſcending either only to the Heirs Male, as has long been practiced in *France*; or to the next of Blood without Diſtinction of Sex, as in *Great Britain* and *Spain*. Others are *Elective*, where, upon the Death of every Prince, another is choſen to ſucceed, without any reſpect to the Heirs of the Predeceſſor, as is uſed in *Poland*.

Of *Hereditary Monarchies* ſome are dependent, holden of earthly Potentates, to whom the Princes are obliged to do Homage for the ſame, as is the Kingdom of *Naples*, holden at this day of the Pope by the King of *Spain*: Others are independent, whoſe Princes acknowledge no Superior upon Earth, but hold only of GOD and by their Sword.

Of this latter ſort is the Empire of *Great Britain*, being an *Hereditary Monarchy*, conſiſting of two Provinces

or

or Kingdoms, governed by one Supreme, Abſolute, Independent, Undepoſable, and Unaccountable Head, according to the known Laws and Cuſtoms of each Kingdom.

It is a *Free Monarchy*, challenging, above many other *European* Kingdoms, an Exemption from all Subjection to the Emperor, or Laws of the Empito which as the *Northern* Part of the Iſland, or Kingdom of *Scotland* was never ſubject; ſo the *Southern* part, ſince called the Kingdom of *England*, being abandoned by the *Romans*, who had by force obtained the Dominion thereof, the Right of Government by all manner of Laws reverted to the ancient Inhabitants, to the laſt of whoſe Kings, *viz. Cadwalladar* our preſent Sovereign is (as appears by the precedent Genealogy) by Lineal and Legitimate Deſcent the true and unqueſtionable Heir.

And as it is exempt from all forreign Juriſdiction and Dominion, ſo likewiſe is it free from all *Interregnum*, and many other Domeſtick Miſchiefs, whereunto *Elective* Kingdoms are ordinarily ſubject.

It is a Monarchy, wherein the Grace and Bounty of its Princes, rendring the ſubordinate Concurrence of the three Eſtates neceſſary to the making and repealing of all Statutes or Acts of Parliament in either Realm, have afforded ſo much to the Induſtry, Liberty, and Happineſs of the Subject, and made the Yoak of Government ſo eaſy, and its Burden ſo light, that, were it not for thoſe malevolent and *Fanatical* Spirits, which by ſowing Jealouſies amongſt the People, and raiſing Animoſities in their Minds againſt their Prince, endeavor to deprive us of the benefit of our Parliaments by rendring their Meetings unpracticable, our Condition might well be envied by all other Nations of the Univerſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Of the Monarch of Great Britain, *and therein of his Name, Title, Arms, Dominions, and Strength: Of his Perſon, Office, Prerogative, Soveraignty, Divinity, and Reſpect.*

TO the Monarch of *Great Britain* is given in *Engliſh*, which is the Language moſt generally ſpoken through his whole Dominions, the Name **King**, which hath its Original from the *Saxon* Word *Koning*, and intimateth that Power and Knowledge, wherewith every Soveraign ſhould eſpecially be inveſted.

The Modern Title, uſed by the Monarch in all Treaties with forreign Princes, and in all publick Affairs, relating to his whole Dominions, and ſtamped upon his Coin, is **By the Grace of GOD King of** Great Britain, France **and** Ireland, **Defender of the Faith**; but in all Writs and other publick Inſtruments, referring to the particular Concerns of either Kingdom of *England* or *Scotland*, the two Kingdoms are diſtinct-

ly, named that Kingdom having the Precedency in ſuch Inſtrument, which is therein particularly concerned.

To the King alone belongs *Dei Gratiâ*, taken ſimply and in the ſtricteſt ſenſe, as holding his Regal Dignity by the Favour of none but GOD; the Archbiſhops and Biſhops, to whom that Title is alſo ſometimes given, muſt underſtand *Dei Gratiâ & Regis*: For tho their Character and Spiritual Function be from GOD alone; yet their Baronies, Dignity, and Intereſt in the State, and even that external Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, which they exerciſe (and that legally in their own Names) within his Majeſties Dominions, are from the Grace and Bounty of the Prince.

Defender of the Faith was (as appears by a Charter of King *Richard* the IId. to the Univerſity of *Oxford*) anciently given to the Kings of *England*, and therefore not ſo much conferred upon, as confirmed unto King *Henry* the VIIIth. by Pope *Leo* the Xth. for a Book written againſt *Luther* in Defence of ſome Points of the *Roman* Faith, and ſince the ejection of that Religion continued in the Crown by Act of Parliament. The

The Title of *Grace*, ſince appropriated to Archbiſhops and Dukes, was firſt given to the King about the Time of *Henry* the IVth. as about the Time of *Edward* the IVth. that of *High and Mighty Prince*, ſince alſo given to Dukes. To *Henry* the VIIIth. was given firſt *Highneſs*, ſince the Stile of all the Princes of the Blood, then *Majeſty*, and now *Moſt Excellent* and *Sacred Majeſty*.

The King of *Great Britain* in his publick Inſtruments and Letters uſes, as his Predeceſſors have ever done ſince the Time of King *John*, *Nos* We in the Plural Number; but before his Time Kings uſed the Singular: Which Cuſtom is ſtill practiced in the Ends of Writs and Patents *Teſte meipſo*.

The Word *Syr*, anſwering to the *Latine Dominus*, and ſuppoſedly the ſame with *Cyr*, an Abbreviation of the *Greek* Word Κύριος, which, prefixt before the *Chriſtian* Name, is given only to Baronets, Knights of the Bath, and Knights Batchelors, is the ordinary Appellation, uſed in ſpeaking to all perſons of the better Rank from the King to the Gentleman;

tho in *France* the Word *Syr* or *Syre* is reſerved only for the King, as is with us, *Great Syr*.

Arms. Arms are Enſigns of Honor, born in a Shield for Diſtinction of Families, and deſcending, as Hereditary, to Poſterity; yet not generally fixt, unleſs in the Kings of *Europe*, in *Great Britain* or *France*, till after the Time of the Holy War about four hundred years ago.

Our firſt *Chriſtian* King, and the firſt *Chriſtian* King of the whole World, *Lucius* bare *Argent*, *a Croſſe Gules*, in the firſt Quarter *a Croſſe Patee Azure*.

After the Deſertion of this Iſland by the *Romans* King *Vortigern* bare *Gules*, *a Croſſe Or*. *Aurelius Ambroſius* bare *Gules*, *a Griffin Sergreant Or*. *Uter Pendragon* bare *Or*, *two Dragons endorſed Vert*, *crowned Gules*. King *Arthur* bare *Vert*, *a Croſſe Argent*, on the firſt Quarter Our Lady with her Son in her Arms. *Cadwalladar*, the laſt King of the *Britains*, bare *Azure*, *a Croſſe Patee* on three parts, and *fitched* on the fourth, *Or*.

The

The Soveraign *Enſigns Armorial* of the King of *Great Britain*, ſince the Uniting of the two Crowns of *England* and *Scotland*, are as followeth.

In the firſt place, *Azure, three Flower-de-Lys Or*, for the Regal Arms of *France*, quartered with the Imperial Enſigns of *England*, which are *Gules, three Lyons Paſſant Guardant in pale Or*; in the ſecond place, *Or*, within a *double Treſſure counter-flowered de Lys, a Lyon Rampant Gules* for the Royal Arms of *Scotland*; In the third place, *Azure, an Iriſh Harp Or, ſtringed Argent*, for the Royal Enſigns of *Ireland*. All within the *Garter*, the chief Enſign of that moſt Honorable Order; above the ſame an *Helmet*, anſwerable to his Majeſties Soveraign Juriſdiction; upon the ſame a rich *Mantle* of Cloth of Gold, *doubled Ermin*, adorned with an Imperial Crown, and ſurmounted for a *Creſt* by a *Lion Paſſant Gardant*, *Crowned* with the like. Upon a Compartment, placed underneath, in the Table whereof is his Majeſties Royal Motto *Dieu & mon Droet*, ſtand the *Supporters*, being a *Lion Rampant Gardant Or*, *Crowned* as the former, and an *Uni-*

corn

corn Argent, *Gorged* with a Crown, having thereto a Chain affixt, paſſing between his Fore-legs, and reflext over his Back, *Or*.

The Arms of *France* are placed firſt, becauſe *France* is the greater Kingdom; and alſo for that thoſe Arms from their firſt Bearing have alwayes been the Enſign of a Kingdom, whereas the Arms of *England* were originally of Dukedoms, having been brought to *England* from *Normandy*, and *Aquitain* by *William* the Conqueror, and *Henry* the IId. and probably likewiſe, that the *French* might be thereby more eaſily induced to acknowledge the *Engliſh* Title.

The Motto *Dieu & mon Droit*, **GOD and my Right**, firſt given by King *Richard* the Iſt. to intimate, that he held not his Empire of any, but of GOD alone, was afterwards taken up by *Edward* the IIId. when he firſt laid Claim to the Crown of *France*.

Dominions. The Dominions of the King of *Great Britain* are at this day in poſſeſſion the Iſlands of *Great Britain* and *Ireland*, containing three Kingdoms of

of large Extent, with all the other Iſles lying in the *Britiſh* Sea, being above four hundred in all, great and ſmall, ſome whereof are very conſiderable, together with all the adjacent Seas even to the Shores of the Neighboring Nations. As a Mark whereof all Ships of Forreigners have anciently demanded leave to fiſh and paſs in theſe Seas, and do at this day lower their Topſails to all the Kings Ships of War. And therefore Children, born upon thoſe Seas (as it ſometimes happens) are eſteemed natural born Subjects to the King of *Great Britain*, and therefore need no Naturalization, as do thoſe, that are born out of his Dominions. He hath likewiſe in poſſeſſion the Iſles of *Jerſey*, *Guernſey*, *Alderney* and *Sark*, being Parcel of the ancient Dutchy of *Normandy*; beſides the profitable Plantations of *New England*, *Virginia*, *Barbados*, *Jamaica*, *Maryland*, *Bermudos*, *Carolina*, *New-York*, and other places in *America*, with ſome in the *Eaſt Indies*, and upon the Coaſt of *Africa*.

The Strength of the Monarch of *Great* Strengt

Great Britain ſince the Union of the two Kingdoms has never yet been fully tried, the Parliaments of the two laſt Kings, infected with the peſtilential Principles of *Presbyterianiſm* and *Democratiſm*, having upon all occaſions proved refractory to their Deſigns, and rather catching at all Opportunities of diminiſhing the Royal Prerogative, and augmenting the (falſly ſo called) Liberty of the People, being (to ſpeak truly) only a Priviledge to Tyrannize more uncontrollably over their Fellow-Subjects; than any wayes endeavoring to ſupport and maintain the Grandeur and Glory of the King and Kingdom: inſomuch that there was invented a moſt unnatural Diſtinction of Subjects into *Royaliſts*, and *Patriots*, as if any man could ſhew himſelf a Lover of his Country by braving and oppoſing the Father of it; whereas the Relation between King and Kingdom is ſo great, that their Wel-being is reciprocal. And tho for ſome time after his Majeſties Return the Parliaments of all his three Kingdoms ſeemed to vy, which of them ſhould moſt readily comply with their Soveraigns Deſires

Deſires and Deſigns; yet the *Fanatical* and *Antimonarchical* Faction (who ever ſince his Majeſties happy Reſtauration have been ſecretly blowing the Coals of Rebellion, and by their ſly and falſe Inſinuations have continually labored to diſquiet the Minds of the People with pretended Fears of Popery, and ungrounded Jealouſies of (I know not what) Arbitrary Power) have ſo far of late prevailed, that the Loyalty of many unthinking perſons has been ſtrangely ſtaggered, and their Spirits ſo exaſperated, that ſeveral of the Engliſh Commonalty have by the Artifices of theſe Seditious *Boutefeus* been brought to ſuch a forgetfulneſs of the Duty, which by all Divine and Humane Laws they ow unto their Prince; that ſome Parliaments have of late ſeemed perfect States of War, wherein a prevalent Faction in the Houſe of Commons, inſtead of readily affording their Aſſiſtance to their Soveraign for the ſtrengthning and ſupporting of his Government againſt Forreign and Domeſtick Enemies, have (under Pretence of ſecuring the Priviledges and Liberty of the People) been tugging

and

and contending to raviſh away the Regal Prerogatives from the Crown, and, by importuning his Majeſty (contrary to his often-declared Reſolutions of never conſenting to ſo great an Injuſtice) to alter the Succeſſion of the Crown from its lineal and legal Deſcent, to ſubvert this ancient and hereditary Monarchy by ruining its firmeſt Fouudation.

But the Intrigues of the Faction having been laid open by his Majeſties Gracious Declaration of the Reaſons, inducing him to diſſolve the two laſt Parliaments, and by the ſeaſonable Publication of that Horrid Aſſociation, a Copy whereof was produced at the late Proceedings againſt the Earl of *Shaftsbury*, in whoſe Cloſet it was proved to have been found, the Miſts, which theſe Religious Jugglers, for the better concealing their damnable Deſigns, had caſt before the Eyes of the People, are ſo far diſſipated, that whenever his Majeſty ſhall in his Princely Wiſdom think fit to call another Parliament, it may well be hoped, that the People, from whoſe Eyes the Scales, which have ſo long blinded them, begin now to drop

drop off, will chooſe themſelves ſuch Repreſentatives, as in their Teſtimonies of Loyalty and Submiſſion to their Soveraign will eagerly ſtrive to outgo the very beſt of their Predeceſſors; ſuch, as will by their unanimous Acknowledgment of the unalterableneſs of the Succeſſion (as has been lately done in *Scotland*) aſſert the Sacredneſs of the *Britiſh* Monarchy; by their Care to put a Stop to the Debauchery of the Preſs, whoſe prolifick Womb, daily teeming with new Monſters, fills every Corner of the Nation with Seditious Pamphlets, will take away thoſe continual Incentives to Rebellion; by undeceiving the deluded Vulgar will free us from that Charm, under which we have now almoſt theſe four years lain (as it were) bewitched; and by readily complying with all his Majeſties juſt and honorable Deſires and Deſignes, will enable him to vindicate his own and the Nations Honor againſt all external Oppoſitions or internal Rebellions: And then it will not be eaſy to comprehend, what great things his Majeſty, ſo Loyally aſſiſted, may attempt and effect, eſpecially if we

ſhall

ſhall but conſider, how the mighty Power of the King of *England*, before the Conjunction of *Scotland*, and total Subjection of *Ireland*, both which were uſually at enmity with him, has been notoriouſly known to the World, and ſufficiently felt by our Neighbor-Nations.

The Iſland of *Great Britain* is (by a preſent learned Writer, to whoſe Collections I am not a little indebted) not unfitly ſaid to reſemble a great Garriſon-Town, not only fenced with ſtrong Works her Port-Towns, and environed with a vaſt and deep Ditch the Sea, but guarded with excellent Outworks, the ſtrongeſt and beſt built Ships of War in the World, and ſo abundantly furniſhed within with Men and Horſes, with Victuals and Ammunition, with Cloaths and Money, that, if all the Potentates of *Europe* ſhould (which GOD forbid) conſpire againſt it, they could hardly diſtreſs it: Inſomuch that we may well be permitted to affirm, that, as her own Natural Commodities are ſufficient to maintain her, ſo nothing, but her own unnatural Seditions,

tions, is capable to deſtroy her.

Thus admirable is the Defenſive Strength of the Monarch of *Great Britain*; nor can his Offenſive Puiſſance but be formidable to the World, when it ſhall be conſidered, that being Maſter of the Sea (as, if he be not wanting to himſelf, or his Subjects to him, he muſt be) he may in ſome ſort be ſaid to be Maſter of every Countrey, bordering thereupon, and is at liberty, where, when, and upon what Terms he pleaſeth, to begin or end a War, for the carrying on of which he is well able, whenever he ſhall think fit ſo to do, to raiſe of *Engliſhmen* (beſides Auxiliaries of valiant *Scots* and *Iriſh*) two hundred thouſand Foot, and fifty thouſand Horſe (ſo many having been computed, during the late Rebellion, to have been in Arms on both ſides, and that without any conſiderable miſs of them in any City, Town, or Village) whoſe natural Agility of Body, Patience, Hardineſs, and Reſolution is ſo great, and their fear of Death ſo little, that ſcarce any Nation of the World, upon equal Terms, and Number, has ever been able to ſtand before them either

either at Sea or Land. For the transporting of an Army his Majesty hath at command neer two hundred Ships of War, and can hire as many, or more stout *English* Merchant Ships, not much inferior to Ships of War, all which he can soon Man with the best Sea Souldiers (if not the best Mariners) in the World. And for the maintaining so vast a Fleet sufficient Money may for a competent Time be raised by a Moderate Land-Tax, and for a long time by an easy Excise, to be laid only upon such Commodities, as naturally tend to the occasioning of Pride, Idleness, Luxury, Wantonness, and the Corruption of good Mannures.

Person. That the Persons of Monarchs have in all Ages of the World been esteemed sacred, and (as such) received a more than ordinary Respect and Veneration from their Subjects, is so manifest from the concurrent Practice of ancient and present Times, that it cannot with any shew of Truth be contradicted.

The Patriarchs of the old World were not only Kings, but Priests, having

in themſelves all Fulneſs of Juriſdiction, and taking no leſs Care for the inſtructing of thoſe, whom GOD had ſubjected to them, in the manner of performing their Adorations to their Creator, than in teaching them the Laws and Inſtitutes of a Civil Life. And tho the Almighty was pleaſed amongſt his own peculiar People the *Iſraelites*, after their Departure out of the Land of *Ægypt*, to ſeparate the Spiritual and Temporal Functions, entailing the Prieſthood upon *Aaron* and his Poſterity, into whoſe Office it was not lawful for their Kings themſelves to intrude, yet were they in all Civil matters ſubject to the Kings Authority, who was (as were alſo the Prieſts) anointed with Oyl, to intimate the Sacredneſs of his Perſon.

When the Kings and Princes of the World began to ſubmit their Crowns and Scepters to the Croſs of our Redeemer, and inſtead of Perſecutors to become Protectors of the Church, this ſacred Ceremony of Anointing was again reſtored, and Monarchs thereby admoniſhed, that, as their Perſons were ſacred and Spiritual, ſo it was no leſs a part of their

Duty

Duty to take care of the external Regulation and peace of the Church, than of the Civil Government of their States. Yet were there antiently none anointed, but the two Emperors of the Eaſt and Weſt, the Kings of *France*, *England*, *Sicily*, and *Hieruſalem*: amongſt whom the Monarch of *Great Britain* may lay as ancient a Claim to this Holy Unction, as any other Prince of *Europe*, the very firſt Kings of this Iſland, after it was freed from the Juriſdiction of the *Romans*, having been anointed. By reaſon of which Unction, it was in the Reign of *Edward* the IIId. declared, that the Kings of *England* were capable of Spiritual Juriſdiction.

Of this Sacred Perſon of the King, of his Life and Safety ſo ſingular a Care is taken, that the Laws of both the Realms, whereinto this Iſland is divided, do herein agree, that it is High Treaſon, only to imagin or intend the Death of the King: And becauſe likewiſe by imagining or conſpiring the Death of the Kings Councellors, or Great Officers of his Houſhold, the Death of the Sovereign may enſue, and is uſually aimed at, all

all ſuch Conſpiracies, tho never taking effect, are puniſhed with Death, tho in all other Capital Caſes no man is put to Death, unleſs the Act follow the Intent.

Nay in ſo high an eſteem is the Kings Perſon had, that to offend againſt thoſe Perſons and Things, whereby he is repreſented, as to kill ſome of the Crown Officers, or any of the Kings Judges, executing their Office, to counterfeit the Kings Seals, or his Moneys, is made High Treaſon, becauſe by all theſe his Sacred Perſon is repreſented. And ſo horrid is this Crime of High Treaſon, that beſides the Loſs of Life and Honour, the Criminal forfeits all his Eſtate Real and Perſonal, his Wife loſes her Dower, his Children their Nobility, and all their Right of Inheritance to him or any other Anceſtor, and are to be ranked amongſt the Peaſantry and Ignoble, till the King ſhall pleaſe to reſtore them, For ſo heinous is this Offence, that the Law can hardly endure to ſee the Poſterity of the Offender ſurvive him.

And rather than Treaſon againſt the Kings Perſon ſhall go unpuniſhed, the

the Innocent ſhall in ſome caſes ſuffer: for if an Ideot or Lunatick (who, having no Will, cannot poſſibly be ſaid to offend) ſhall, during his Ideocy, or Lunacy, kill or go about to kill the King, he ſhall be puniſhed as a Traytor; tho not being *Compos mentis*, he can neither commit Felony, Petit Treaſon, or any other ſort of High Treaſon,

So tender a Regard is moreover had of this moſt precious Perſon of the King, that no Phyſick ought to be adminiſtred to him, but what his Phyſicians prepare with their own Hands, and not by the Hands of any Apothecary; nor are they to uſe the Aſſiſtance of any Chirurgeons, but ſuch, as are ſworn Chirurgeons to his Perſon.

This Perſon of the King in his Natural as well as Politick Capacity is every Subject to defend with his own Life and Limbs. For, the King being Father of his Country, it ſhould ſeem a pleaſant thing to every Loyal-hearted Subject to loſe Life or Limb in defending him from Conſpiracies, Rebellions, or Invaſions, or aſſiſting him in the Execution of his Laws.

The

The Office of the Monarch of *Great Britain* (and indeed of every *Chriſtian* Prince) was by the Holy *Roman* Biſhop St. *Eleutherius* deſcribed to our firſt *Chriſtian* King *Lucius*: Which Deſcription, recorded in the Laws of St. *Edward* the Confeſſor, King of *England*, is, as followeth. *A King, being the Miniſter and Delegate of the Supreme King, is appointed by GOD for this end, that He govern this Earthly Kingdom and People of our Lord, and above all that he govern and venerate his Church, defending it from all, who would injure it: That he root out of it, and utterly deſtroy all Evil-Doers.* Office.

For the better enabling themſelves to diſcharge this great and weighty Office (to the juſt and upright Performance whereof every King at his Coronation obliges himſelf by ſolemn Oath) the Monarchs of *Great Britain* have reſerved, as inherent in their Crown, certain extraordinary Powers, Preeminences, and Priviledges, commonly called Royal Prerogatives, ſome of the moſt remarkable whereof, in which, as being neceſſary for the Preſervation of the Government, and Prerogatives.

the Innocent ſhall in ſome caſes ſuffer: for if an Ideot or Lunatick (who, having no Will, cannot poſſibly be ſaid to offend) ſhall, during his Ideocy, or Lunacy, kill or go about to kill the King, he ſhall be puniſhed as a Traytor; tho not being *Compos mentis*, he can neither commit Felony, Petit Treaſon, or any other ſort of High Treaſon,

So tender a Regard is moreover had of this moſt precious Perſon of the King, that no Phyſick ought to be adminiſtred to him, but what his Phyſicians prepare with their own Hands, and not by the Hands of any Apothecary; nor are they to uſe the Aſſiſtance of any Chirurgeons, but ſuch, as are ſworn Chirurgeons to his Perſon.

This Perſon of the King in his Natural as well as Politick Capacity is every Subject to defend with his own Life and Limbs. For, the King being Father of his Country, it ſhould ſeem a pleaſant thing to every Loyal-hearted Subject to loſe Life or Limb in defending him from Conſpiracies, Rebellions, or Invaſions, or aſſiſting him in the Execution of his Laws.

The

The Office of the Monarch of *Great Britain* (and indeed of every *Chriſtian* Prince) was by the Holy *Roman* Biſhop St. *Eleutherius* deſcribed to our firſt *Chriſtian* King *Lucius*: Which Deſcription, recorded in the Laws of St. *Edward* the Confeſſor, King of *England*, is, as followeth. *A King, being the Miniſter and Delegate of the Supreme King, is appointed by GOD for this end, that He govern this Earthly Kingdom and People of our Lord, and above all that he govern and venerate his Church, defending it from all, who would injure it: That he root out of it, and utterly deſtroy all Evil-Doers.* Office.

For the better enabling themſelves to diſcharge this great and weighty Office (to the juſt and upright Performance whereof every King at his Coronation obliges himſelf by ſolemn Oath) the Monarchs of *Great Britain* have reſerved, as inherent in their Crown, certain extraordinary Powers, Preeminences, and Priviledges, commonly called Royal Prerogatives, ſome of the moſt remarkable whereof, in which, as being neceſſary for the Preſervation of the Government, and Prerogatives.

the Safety and Intereſt of the People, the Laws of both Kingdoms agree, do here follow.

The King ſolely and alone has by his Royal Prerogative, without any Act of Parliament, the abſolute Power of declaring War, making Peace, ſending and receiving Ambaſſadours, entring into and concluding Leagues and Treaties with any Forreign Prince or State. He has the ſole Diſpoſing and Ordering of the *Militia* by Sea and Land, raiſing Forces, Garriſoning and Fortifying Places, ſetting out Ships of War, and Preſſing Men, if need require. He alone diſpoſes of all Magazins, Ammunition, Caſtles, Fortreſſes, Ports and Havens, and has the laying out and employing, as he pleaſes, of all Publick Monies or the Revenues of the Crown and Kingdom. He appoints the Metal, Weight, Purity, and Value of Money, and may by his Proclamation make any Forreign Coin to be lawful and Current Money within his Dominions.

By his Royal Prerogative, he may of his meer Will and Pleaſure convoke, adjourn, prorogue, remove, and diſſolve Parliaments, and may to any

Act,

Act, passed by them, give or refuse (without rendring any Reason) his Royal Assent, without which a Bill is but a meer *Cadaver*, a lifeless and inanimate Lump. He may at his pleasure increase the number of the Members of Parliament by creating new Barons, and bestowing Priviledges upon other Towns to send Burgesses to Parliament: Yea, he may call to Parliament by Writ any one, whether Alien or Native, whom he in his Princely Wisdom shall think fit, and may refuse to send his Writ to some others, that have sat in former Parliaments.

His Majesty alone hath the Choice and Nomination of all Magistrates, Councellors, and Officers of State, of all Bishops, and other high Dignities in the Church, of all Commanders, and other Officers at Sea and Land; the bestowing of all Honors of the higher and lower Nobility; the Power of determining Rewards for Services, and Punishments for Misdemeanors.

He may by his Letters Patents erect new Counties, Bishopricks, Universities, Cities, Burroughs, Hospitals, Schools, Fairs, Markets, Courts

of Juſtice, Forreſts, Chaſes and Free-Warrens.

He hath by his Prerogative Power to enfranchiſe an Alien, and thereby to enable him to purchaſe Houſes and Lands, and to bear ſome Offices. He hath Power to grant Letters of Mart or Repriſal, Safe Conducts, *&c.*

No Proclamation can be made, but by the King: Between which and a Statute as the Difference originally was not great, the King making the latter by the Common Councel of the Kingdom, whereas in the former he had but the Advice of his great Councel of the Peers, or of his Privy Councel only: So what Judgment Parliaments have formerly had of Proclamations, appears by theſe Words of a Statute, made in the one and thirtieth year of King *Henry* the VIIIth. *Foraſmuch as the King, by the Advice of his Councel, hath ſet forth Proclamations, which obſtinate Perſons have contemned; not conſidering what a King by his Royal Power may do: Conſidering that ſudden Cauſes and Occaſions fortune many times, which do require ſpeedy Remedies, and that by abiding for a Parliament, in the mean*

mean time might happen great prejudice to ensue to the Realm: And weighing also, that his Majesty, which by the Kingly and Regal Power, given him by GOD, may do many things in such Cases, should not be driven to extend the Liberties, and Supremity of his Regal Power, and Dignity, by wilfulness of froward Subjects: It is therefore thought fit, that the King with the Advice of his Honorable Councel should set forth Proclamations for the good of the People, and Defence of his Royal Dignity, as necessity shall require.

The King only can give Patents in case of Losses by Fire, or otherwise, to receive the charitable Benevolences of the People, without which none may ask it publickly.

The King by his Prerogative is *Ultimus Hæres Regni*, and the Receptacle of all Estates, when no Heir appears: For this cause all Estates for want of Heirs, or by Forfeiture, escheat to the King. All Spiritual Benefices, for want of Presentation by the Bishop, are lapsed at last to the King. All Money, Gold, Silver, Plate or Bullion, found (and the Owners there-

of not known) belong to the King: and ſo do all Wayfs, Strays, Wrecks, not granted away by him, or any of his Predeceſſors. All Waſt Ground, or Land, recovered from the Sea; all Land of Aliens, dying before Naturalization; all things, the property whereof is not known; and all Gold or Silver Mines, in whoſe Ground ſoever they are found, belong to the King.

In the Church the Kings Prerogative is very great. He only hath the Patronage of all Biſhopricks: None can be elected Biſhop, but whom he hath firſt nominated; None can be conſecrated, or take poſſeſſion of the Revenues of any Biſhoprick without his ſpecial Writ or Aſſent. He is the Nurſing-Father of the Church, and hath Power to call a National or Provincial Synod, and with the Advice and Conſent thereof to make Canons, Orders, Ordinances and Conſtitutions, relating to the Government and Polity of the Church, wherein (as it was affirmed by *Chriſtopher Wray*, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons in the thirteenth year of Queen *Elizabeth*) the Princes Power is abſolute.

The

The King has Power, upon Cauſes only known to himſelf, to diſpence by *Non Obſtantes* with General Laws, made in Parliament, and with the Penalties for tranſgreſſing them, where ſuch Penalty is appropriated to himſelf alone; to mitigate the Rigor of the Laws, where Equity and Conſcience require Moderation; to alter or ſuſpend any particular Law, that he judges hurtfull to the Commonwealth; to pardon a Man, legally condemned; to grant ſpecial Priviledges to particular Perſons, Colledges, and Corporations, and if any Doubt ariſes concerning ſuch Priviledges, he only has Right to interpret them. To him, and the Judges, conſtituted by him, does it belong to interpret all Statutes, and to determin, and paſs Sentence in Caſes, not defined by Law.

Theſe are ſome Branches of that *Jus Coronæ*, of that Regal Prerogative, of the name whereof however ſome perſons are afraid, yet may they aſſure themſelves, that the Caſe of Subjects would be deſperately miſerable without it: ſince the Kings juſt Rights are the beſt Preſerver of the Peoples Liberties, being an impregnable Bul-

wark againſt all popular Invaſions and illegal Powers. Nor have there ever been found any greater Oppreſſors of the People, than thoſe, who under pretence of aſſerting their Liberties have endeavored to leſſen the Royal Authority. Thus in the great Conteſt between *Henry* the IIId. King of *England*, and the Barons, about the prerended Liberties of themſelves and the People, the King being forced at length to yield, the Lords, inſtead of that glorious Freedom, which they promiſed the Nation, ingroſſed all Power into their own Hands under the Name of the twenty four Conſervators of the Kingdom, behaving themſelves like ſo many Tyrants, acting all in their own Names, and in Juntoes of their own, wholly neglecting, or elſe over-ruling Parliaments. But then not agreeing among themſelves, four of them (*viz.* the Earls of *Leiceſter*, *Gloceſter*, *Hereford* and *Spencer*) defeated the other twenty, and drew the entire Management of Affairs into their own hands: Yet it continued ſo not long, *Leiceſter* getting all into his own Power, who being ſlain in Battle, the King recovered his Authority, and the People their true Liberty. Many

Many of theſe Prerogatives, thoſe eſpecially, that concern Juſtice, and Peace, are ſo eſſential to Royalty, that they cannot be ſeparated from it, but by the deſtruction of the Monarchy it ſelf. Not without reaſon therefore did the Eſtates of *England*, aſſembled in Parliament in the Reign of King *Edward* the IIId. declare, that they could not (tho the King himſelf ſhould deſire it) aſſent to any thing, which tended to the Diſheriſon of the King and his Crown, whereunto they were ſworn. The King therefore, as he is by his Office *Debitor Juſtitiæ*, obliged to adminiſter Juſtice to his People, ſo is he in Conſcience bound to maintain the Rights of the Crown in poſſeſſion, and to endeavour the recovery of thoſe, whereof it has been diſpoſſeſt. And how diſmal the Effects have been, whenever any King, neglecting the religious obſervance of this part of his Duty, has been prevailed upon to give way to the leſſening of his Royal Prerogative, we have a ſad Example in his Majeſties Father of Bleſſed Memory, who parting (tho but only *Pro illa vice*) with his abſolute Power of diſſolving Parliaments,

aments, and giving it to the two Houſes, they never ceaſed farther incroaching upon his Prerogatives, till he himſelf was barbarouſly murthered, the Government wholly ſubverted, and all the Liberties of the People trampled under foot. To him therefore, that ſhall ſeriouſly conſider the many fatal Miſchiefs and Inconveniences, which neceſſarily follow the Diminution of the Kings Prerogative, it will ſeem no Paradox to affirm, that it is the Subjects great Intereſt to be far more ſollicitous, that the King maintain and uphold his own Prerogative and Preeminence, than their Rights and Liberties, which, as they had no other Original but the Grace and Bounty of the Prince, ſo muſt they of neceſſity periſh, when he is no longer able to protect them. It is not thefore to be wondred, that a right Apprehenſion of ſuch pernicious Conſequences made his Sacred Majeſty refuſe his Royal Aſſent to a Bill, preſented him for the raiſing of the *Militia*, tho it was (if paſſed into an Act) to have continued in force but ſix Weeks: Becauſe the Tendency of the Bill being to put out of his Poſſeſſion the *Poſſe Regni*, or abſo-

absolute command over the Forces of the Realm, he could not answer unto GOD, by whom alone he is intrusted with his Regal Power for the Safety and Well-Government of his Subjects, the abandoning (tho for so short a time) the Protection and Defence of the People, committed to his Charge.

Whatever things are proper unto Supreme Majesty, Scepters and Crowns, the Purple Robe, the Globe or Golden Ball, and Holy Unction, have as long appertained to the *British* Monarch, as to any other Prince in *Europe*. The Antiquity of anointing Kings in *Britain* has been already shewn out of *Gildas*; and as for the other four, they are by *Leland*, a famous Antiquary, ascribed unto King *Arthur*, who began his Reign in the Year of our Lord 506. Which was as soon, as they were ordinarily in use with the *Roman* Emperors. Sovereignty.

The King of *Great Britain* is an absolute and unaccountable Monarch, a Free Prince of Soveraign Power, not holding his Kingdom in Vassallage nor receiving his Instalment or Investiture from

from another; Nor does he acknowledge Superiority to any, but to GOD alone.

He is not only the Supreme, but ſole Legiſlator within his Dominions. The Power of making Laws (whatever ſome Antimonarchiſts pretend to the contrary) reſts ſolely in him. And altho the Gracious Condeſcenſion of our Kings has been ſuch, as to render the ſubordinate Concurrence of the Eſtates of each Realm a Condition, requiſite to the making of new, or abrogating of old Laws within the reſpective Kingdoms; yet are they not thereby admitted to any Share in the Soveraignty, their Power being wholly derivative from the King, who is *Caput, Principium, & Finis Parliamentorum*, the three Eſtates, when aſſembled in Parliament, being as much his Subjects, as every particular Man of them is, when the Meeting is diſſolved. All Bills, paſſed by them, are but ſo much dead matter, till quickned by his Royal *Fiat*, which alone gives Life and Form to all their Proceedings. Nor is it *ex debito Juſtitiæ*, but of his Special Grace, that he paſſes ſuch Acts, as are preſented to him

him. Thus *Henry* the IIId. begins his *Magna Charta* with **Know ye, that WE of our meer and free Will have given these Liberties.** Thus we hear King *Edward* the Ist. saying: **The King of his special Grace for Redress of the Grievances of His People sustained by his Laws, and for the Amendment of their Estate, and to the intent that they may be the more ready to do him Service, the more willing to assist and aid him in time of need,** Grants. 28. E. 1. c. 1. And altho of later times Laws are said to be made by Authority of Parliament, yet if we look into our antient Statutes, we shall find the meaning to be, that *The King Ordains, the Lords advise, and the Commons consent.*

Those then are much mistaken, who affirm the Parliament to be (at the least) as Essential a Part of the Government as the Prince: Which if it were true, whenever the Parliament is dissolved, the Government would be so too. But this with the Pernicious Maxim of Coordinacy, or sharing the Soveraign Power between King, Lords, and Commons, with other treasonable and Antimonarchical Doctrines, daily

daily diſperſed amongſt the People, and with the utmoſt of his Art induſtriouſly aſſerted by the Author of a late ſeditious Book, entituled *Plato Redivivus*, together with his audacious Propoſals, aiming to take all the Flowers out of the Imperial Diadem of the *Britiſh* Monarch, are moſt fitly to be anſwered in *Weſtminſter*-Hall, as tending no leſs to the ſubverſion of our Government (which being purely Monarchical, may be without the two Houſes, whereas they cannot be without the King) than thoſe traitorous Deſigns, for which *Coleman* and his Accomplices paid their forfeited Lives to the Juſtice of the Laws.

The King of *Great Britain* is Lord Paramount, ſupreme Landlord of all the Lands within his Dominions, all landed men being mediately or immediately his Tenants by ſome Tenure, or other. *By the Laws and Ordinances of ancient Kings* (ſaith Sir *Edward Cook* in the firſt part of his Inſtitutes) *and eſpecially of King* Alfred *it appeareth, that the firſt Kings of this Realm had all the Lands of* England *in Demeſne; and the great Manors and Royalties they reſerved to themſelves and*

of

of the Remnant they, for the Defence of the Realm, enfeoffed the Barons of the Realm with ſuch Juriſdiction, as the Court Baron now hath. The King (as it is evident by the Rolls of the Chancellery in *Scotland*, which contain their eldeſt and fundamental Laws) is *Dominus omnium bonorum*, and *Dominus directus totius Dominii*, the whole Subjects being but his Vaſſals, and from him holding all their Lands as their Over-lord. Thus none, but the King, hath *Allodium* and *Directum Dominium*, the ſole and independent Property in any Land. Upon this Ground no doubt it was that Serjeant *Heal* in the three and fortieth year of Queen *Elizabeth* ſaid in Parliament, *He marvelled, the Houſe ſtood either at the granting of a Subſidy or time of Payment, when all we have, is her Majeſties, and She may lawfully at her pleaſure take it from us; and that She had as much Right to all our Lands and Goods, as to any Revenue of the Crown*, And he ſaid, he could prove it by Precedents in the time of *Henry* the IIId. King *John* and King *Stephen*. And upon the ſame Ground was it reſolved by the Judges in the beginning of the Reign of King

James

James, when there was a purpoſe to have taken away Tenures by Act of Parliament, That ſuch a Statute had been void, becauſe the Tenures were for the Defence of the King and Kingdom. And altho ſince that the Tenures, which gave a Dependency upon the Crown, and were the greateſt Safety to the King and People, have been taken away, and thereby a great Blow given to Monarchy; yet let thoſe, who have the Fee, the *Jus perpetuum*, and the *Utile Dominium*, have a care, leſt by following the miſchievous Advice of *Plato Redivivus*, and abuſing the Grace and Bounty of the Prince by endeavoring to draw the Soveraignty to themſelves, they neceſſitate not their King, for the Preſervation of himſelf and People, to have Recourſe to his Prerogative, which is a Preheminence, in Caſes of Neceſſity, above and before the Law of Property or Inheritance: For the Prevention whereof it is to be wiſhed, that either by an Act of Reſumption of the ancient Demeſns of the Crown (which was a ſacred Patrimony, and by Law unalienable) or by ſuch other way, as the Wiſdom of the Nation ſhall think fit,

ſit, a Royal Support, adæquate to the Charges of the Crown, be made for the King to defend his Kingdom and protect his People: ſo that he may not be reduced to the Infelicity of having a precarious Revenue out of the Peoples Purſe, and to be beholden to a Parliament for his Bread in time of Peace, which is no good Condition for a Monarchy.

As the Legiſlative Power is ſolely in the King, ſo he alone has the Soveraign Power in the Adminiſtration of Juſtice and Execution of the Law. He is the Fountain of all Juſtice, which by his Judges, and other inferior Officers, as ſo many Cryſtal Pipes, he conveyeth to his People. *We will* (ſaith *Edward* the Iſt. in his Book of Laws, written at his appointment by *John Briton*, Biſhop of *Hereford*) *that our own Juriſdiction be above all Juriſdictions in our Realm, ſo that in all manner of Felonies, Treſpaſſes, Contracts, and all other Actions Perſonal or Real, We have Power to render or cauſe to be rendred ſuch Judgments as do appertain without other Proceſs, whereever we know the right Truth, as Judges. All Juriſdiction*

diction (ſay the *Scotch* Laws) *ſtands and conſiſts in the Kings perſon by reaſon of his Royal Authority aud Crown, and is competent to no Subject; but flows and proceeds from the King, having Supreme Juriſdiction, and is given and committed by him to his Subjects, as he pleaſes.* The King then is the ſole Supreme Judge, all other Judges being his Deputies, to whom whatſoever Power is by him committed, yet is the laſt Appeal alwayes to be made to himſelf, who may therefore (as his Predeceſſors formerly have done) ſit in any Court, and take Cognizance of any Cauſe: but in Treaſons, Felonies, *&c.* the King, being Plaintif, ſits not perſonally in Judgment, but doth perform it by his Delegates.

From the King of *Great Britain*, who, being the only Supreme Head, is furniſhed with Plenary Power and Juriſdiction to render Juſtice to every Member within his Dominions, there lies no Appeal in Eccleſiaſtical Cauſes to the Biſhop of *Rome*, whoſe Authority ever ſince the Reformation has been here wholly abrogated; nor in Civil Matters to the Emperor, who for above twelve hundred years has not had the leaſt Sha-

Shadow of Pretence to any Juriſdiction within this Iſland; nor in either to the people, who both in themſelves, and by their Repreſentatives in Parliament, as well *Conjunctim* as *Diviſim*, are his Subjects, and ow Obedience to his Commands.

To Legiſlation and Judicature, which are ſolely and ſupremely in the King, is neceſſary the Power of the Sword (without which all other Power is nothing) for forcing Obedience to the Laws, and Judgments given both in Criminal and Civil Cauſes. This, having in virtue of their Soveraignty been alwayes indiſputably enjoyed by the Monarchs of this Nation till the time of the late Rebellion, was ſince his Majeſties Reſtauration by a Parliament, as truly zealous for the happineſs of their King and Country, as ever this Nation ſaw, in proper and expreſs Terms declared to be the Right of the King only without either of his Houſes of Parliament, the contrary Poſition thereunto, aſſerted by the rebellious Members of the Parliament of 1640. having been the chief Means of overturning our Government, and bringing Confuſion

ſion and Miſery upon this flouriſhing Kingdom.

Divinity. So great was the Veneration, ſhewn to the ancient *Chriſtian* Emperors by their Subjects, that they gave them (tho imperfectly only and Analogically) the Titles of *Your Everlaſtingneſs*, *Your Divinity*, and the like, belonging eſſentially and perfectly to GOD alone: Who, to ſhew the great Power, by him given to Soveraign Princes, and to beget in the Hearts of their People an higher Eſteem, and more reverend Awfulneſs of them, which failing, all Confuſion, Impiety and Calamity break in upon a Nation, is himſelf pleaſed, as is manifeſt in Holy Writ, to beſtow upon them the Title of Gods, as being his Vicegerents, and repreſenting his Majeſty and Power upon Earth.

Nay ſo exceſſive was the Reſpect of the good *Chriſtians* of thoſe times, that they were wont to ſwear by the Majeſty of their Emperor, as *Joſeph* ſometimes did by the Life of *Pharaoh*. And this Cuſtom ſeems to be juſtified by *Vegetus*, a learned Writer of that Age, being practiced only to create in the

the Subjects a greater Reverence for these Earthly Deities.

In like manner the Laws and Constitutions of this Monarchy attribute to the King, whom they regard as GOD upon Earth, divers Excellencies, which belong properly to none but GOD. Thus as GOD is perfect, so the Law will have no Imperfection found in the King: No Negligence, no Folly, no Infamy, or Corruption of Blood, all former Attainders (tho even made by Act of Parliament) being *ipso facto* purged by the Accession of the Crown.

To the King is attributed Infallibility and Justice in the Abstract: *The King cannot erre*; *The King can do no wrong*. To the King is likewise ascribed a Kind of Immortality: *The King never dies*; as being a Corporation in himself, that lives for ever: For all *Interregna* being unknown in these Kingdoms, the same Moment, that one King dies, the next Heir is fully and absolutely King without any Coronation, Ceremony, or Act to be done.

The

The King is alſo in ſome ſort ſaid to be Omnipreſent. He is in a manner every where, in all his Courts of Juſtice, in all his Palaces: Therefore it is, that all his Subjects ſtand bare in the Preſence Chamber, whereſoever the Chair of State is placed, tho the King be many Miles diſtance from thence.

He hath alſo a kind of Univerſal Influence over all his Dominions. His Fatherly Care is extended to preſerve, feed, inſtruct and defend the whole Commonweal. His War, His Peace, His Courts of Juſtice, and all His Acts of Soveraignty tend only to preſerve and diſtribute to every perſon within his Territories their particular Rights and Priviledges.

By his Power of creating to the higheſt Dignity, and annihilating the ſame at pleaſure; and much more by his Prerogative of pardoning thoſe, whom the Law has condemned, he is inveſted with a kind of Omnipotency, whereby he can reſtore to life thoſe, that are dead in Law. And this Power of pardoning condemned Criminals is of ſuch Benefit to the Lives and Eſtates of the People, that without

out it many would be expoſed to die unjuſtly.

The King alone in his own Dominions can ſay with GOD, whoſe Repreſentative he is, *Vengeance is Mine*: For all Puniſhments proceed from him in ſome of his Courts of Juſtice, it not being lawful for any Subject to avenge himſelf.

The King alone is Judge in his own Cauſe, tho he delivers his Judgment by the Mouth of his Judges.

But in nothing doth the King more reſemble the eternal Deity, than in the Plenitude of his Power to do, what he pleaſes, without being oppoſed, reſiſted, or queſtioned by his Subjects. *Nemo quidem* (ſaith *Bracton*) *de factis ejus præſumat diſputare, multo minus contra factum ejus ire.* Let none preſume to ſearch into his deeds, much leſs to oppoſe them. Nor is this a Priviledge, belonging only to the King of *Great Britain*, but a Prerogative inherent in every Soveraign Prince by vertue of his Soveraignty. *Where the word of a King is, there is Power: and who may ſay unto him, what doſt thou?* ſaith the Spirit of God by the mouth of the Royal Prophet *Salomon*. For

Kingly

Kingly Power, being by the Law of God, hath no inferior Law to limit it. The Emperor (ſaith Saint *Auguſtine*) is not Subject to Laws, who hath Power to make other Laws. Accordingly it is delivered by the great Lawyer *Ulpian* for a Rule of the Civil Law, *Princeps Legibus ſolutus eſt*, The Prince is not bound by the Laws: Agreeable whereunto is what is ſaid in the Laws of *England*, *Poteſtas Principis non eſt incluſa Legibus*. The Power of the Prince is not included in the Laws. Hence no doubt it was, that Mr. *Grivel* in the Thirty firſt year of Queen *Elizabeth* ſaid in Parliament, *That he wiſhed not the making of many Laws: ſince the more we make, the leſs Liberty we have our ſelves, Her Majeſty not being bound by them.* Yet is not this ſo to be underſtood, that Kings have hereby a right to do Injury; but that it is Right for them to go unpuniſhed by their People, if they do it. The King cannot be impleaded for any Crime. No Action lieth againſt his Perſon: For the Writ goeth forth in his Name, and he cannot arreſt himſelf. If he ſhould (which God forbid) violently ſeize upon the Eſtate of any Subject, having

ing no Title by Law ſo to do, the only Remedy is by Petitioning him to amend his Fault, which if he ſhall refuſe to do, it will be Puniſhment ſufficient for him to expect, that GOD, who has given him his Prerogative of being above all Laws for the good only of them, that are under the Laws, and for the Defence of his Peoples Liberties, will ſeverely avenge the Cauſe of oppreſſed Loyal Subjects.

But altho whatever the King ſhall do, he is not queſtionable for it by his Subjects; yet there are divers things, which he cannot do *Salvo Jure*, *Salvo Juramento*, *& Salva Conſcientia ſua.* For by an Oath, taken at his Coronation, the King obliges himſelf, and indeed without any Oath he is by the Law of Nature and *Chriſtianity* (as are all other *Chriſtian* Kings) obliged to procure the Safety and Welfare of his People, to protect and defend them againſt their Enemies, to maintain and preſerve them in their Properties, juſt Rights, and Liberties, to adminiſter upright Juſtice with Diſcretion and Mercy, and in order thereunto to conſent to the enacting of good Laws and repealing of Bad. Thus the King can do nothing

unjuſtly, nor can he diveſt himſelf or his Succeſſors of any part of his Regal Power, Prerogative, and Authority, inherent in the Crown, and neceſſary for the Government and Protection of his People. Two things there are eſpecially, which having ſomewhat of *Odium* in them, the King doth not uſually do without the Conſent of his Parliament, that is, make new Laws, and impoſe new Taxes: the one whereof ſeems (and does but ſeem) to infringe the Peoples Liberties, and the other to entrench upon their Properties. To take away therefore all Occaſions of Diſaffection to the Anointed of the Lord (ſtiled in Holy Scripture the Breath of our Noſtrils, and the Light of our Eyes) the Wiſdom of our former Princes, his Majeſties Royal Anceſtors, has contrived, that for both theſe there ſhould Petitions firſt be made by the People to the King.

Tho theſe and divers other Prerogatives do rightfully belong unto, and are enjoyed by the Monarch of *Great Britain*; yet doth he ordinarily govern his people by the known Laws and Cuſtoms of his Kingdoms, making uſe of his Royal Prerogative for the Benefit, not

not Damage of his Subjects, in ſome rare and extraordinary Caſes only.

Hereunto may be added a ſingular and Miraculous Priviledge, enjoyed by the Kings of *Great Britain*, *quatenus* Kings, conferred firſt by the Divine Benignity upon that Bleſſed King of *England*, St. *Edward* the Confeſſor, and ever ſince continued to his Succeſſors, which is, by the Impoſition of their Sacred Hands to drive away and cure that ſtubborn Diſeaſe, called the *Struma* or *Scrofula*, and by us commonly from this ſupernatural manner of its Cure the **Kings Evil.**

Upon certain dayes almoſt every Week, during the cold Seaſons, his Majeſty graciouſly permits all, that are afflicted with that Diſeaſe, having been firſt carefully viewed, and allowed by his Chirurgeons, to be brought into his Royal Preſence: Where an appointed Form of Divine Service (conſiſting of ſome ſhort Prayers, pertinent to the Occaſion, and two Portions of Holy Scripture, taken out of the Goſpel) being read, the King at the pronouncing of theſe Words *(They ſhall lay their hands upon the Sick, and*

they *ſhall recover*) gently draws both his Hands over the Sore of the ſick perſon, the ſame words being repeated at every Touch.

And at theſe Words (*This was the true Light, which enlightneth every Man, that cometh into this World*) he putteth about the Neck of each Sick perſon a piece of Gold, called (from the Impreſſion) an *Angel*, being in value about eleven Shillings *Sterling*.

This evident Cure is by many malignant Nonconformiſts, thoſe true Sons of *Belial*, daily deſpiſing, and ſpeaking evil of Dignities, aſcribed to the Strength of Fancy and exalted Imagination; but little do they reflect, upon how many tender Infants, no way capable of ſuch Tranſports, this ſtupendious Cure is effectually performed.

Reſpect. In conſideration of theſe and many other tranſcendent Excellencies, to no Prince, or other Potentate in *Chriſtendom* is done more Honour, Reverence, or Reſpect, than to the Monarch of *Great Britain*: All his Subjects at their firſt Addreſſes kneel unto him; At Table he is ſerved on the knee; All perſons (the Prince or other Heir apparent

rent not excepted) are bare-headed in his Preſence; In the Preſence Chamber (tho the King be not there) all men are not only uncovered, but do, or ought to do Reverence to the Chair of State.

The Kings only Teſtimony of any thing, done in his preſence, is of as high a Nature and Credit, as any Record: And in all Writs, ſent forth for the Diſpatch of Juſtice, he uſeth no other Witneſs but himſelf, viz. *Teſte meipſo.*

As the King of *Great Britain* is thus reverenced and reſpected at home, ſo is he no leſs honored and eſteemed abroad. For if he be regarded ſolely as King of *England*, we ſhall find, that the Emperor was accounted *Filius major Eccleſiæ*; the King of *France Filius minor*; and the King of *England Filius adoptivus*: That in General Councels the King of *France* took place on the Emperors Right Hand; the King of *England* on his Left; the King of *Scots* having Precedency next before *Caſtile*: And that, tho ſince the time of the Emperor *Charles* the Vth. the Kings of *Spain* have challenged the Precedency of all *Chriſtian* Princes, (which nevertheleſs

leſs they have within this twenty years yielded to *France*) yet in the time of our King *Henry* the VIIth. Pope *Julius* gave it to the *Engliſh* before the *Spaniard.*

But if looking upon him, as ſucceeding to the ancient *Britiſh* Kings (whoſe true and undoubted Heir he is by Lineal and unqueſtionable Deſcent) we ſhall conſider the Antiquity of his Predeceſſors, either as Kings (Reigning here above a thouſand years before the coming in of the *Romans*, His Majeſty, now regnant, being from the firſt *Britiſh* Kings the hundred thirty nineth Monarch) or as *Chriſtians*, this Iſland having not only ſhewn to the World the firſt *Chriſtian* King, named *Lucius* (whence the Title of *Primogenitus Eccleſiæ* rightfully belongs to the King of *Great Britain*) but given to the Church the firſt *Chriſtian* Emperor, even the famous *Conſtantin*, here born of the renowned *Britiſh* Lady St *Helena*, by whoſe Example and Encouragement the Faith was generally received throughout the whole Empire: The Independency and Abſoluteneſs of his Authority, holding of none but GOD, and having in his own Dominions neither Superiour nor Equal:

Equal: The Eminence of his Royal Dignity, State, and Titles, his Realm not having been only ſtiled an Empire, and his Crown Imperial, but this Iſland both in antient and later Times having been regarded as another World, whereof the Monarch is ſole Lord and Emperor: The Martial Exploits and Atchiévements of his Anceſtors abroad, amongſt whom is the firſt *Chriſtian* Worthy, and firſt Founder of Martial Knighthood, the famous King *Arthur*, in whoſe Heroick Acts there is Truth enough (all, that is thought fabulous, being rejected) to render him renowned to all poſterity: The Gallantry and and Stoutneſs of his People, ariſing from their Freedom, the Plentifulneſs of their Country, and Generality of their Wealth: His long-lined Royal Extraction, wherein His Majeſty, now Reigning, excels all the Monarchs of the *Chriſtian* (if not of the whole) World: The Hoſpitality, and Magnificence of his Court, than which no Court in *Chriſtendom* is ſerved with more punctual Attendance and State: The Diverſity of Nations, and differing maternal Tongues, ſubject to his Command: The admirable Laws and

Conſtitutions of his Government: The Greatneſs of his Power by Sea and Land both Offenſive and Defenſive: Theſe and many other his Prerogatives conſidered, We may well be permitted to affirm, that (beſides the Preeminence he may challenge by his juſt Right to the Crown of *France*) the Monarch of *Great Brittain* (except the Precedency, which he, as all other *Chriſtan* Princes, acknowledges to the Emperor) if he go not before, yet at leaſt ought not to come behind any King whatſoever.

CHAP. XII.

Of Succeſſion to the Crown of Great Britain.

THE Monarch of *Great Brittain* has Right to the Imperial Crown of this Iſland by Inheritance, according to the Laws of GOD and Nature, and the fundamental Conſtitutions of the Realms of *England* and *Scotland*, which both agree in this, That, upon the Death of the King, the next of Kindred, tho born out of the Dominions

ons of *Great Britain*, or born of Parents, not Subjects of *Great Britain*, is immediately King before any Proclamation, Coronation, Publication, or Conſent of Peers or People.

The Rule of Inheritance, given by GOD himſelf to the People of *Iſrael*, is this: *If a man dy, and have no Son, then he ſhall cauſe his Inheritance to paſs unto his Daughter. And if he have no Daughter, then ye ſhall give his Inheritance unto his Brethren.*

Agreeably to which Rule, the Crown of *Great Britain* deſcends, as an inalienable Heritage, from the Father to the eldeſt Son and his Heirs; for want of Sons, to the Eldeſt Daughter, and her Heirs; for want of Daughters to the Brother and his Heirs; and for want of Brethren, to the Siſter and her Heirs.

And ſo unalterable is this Courſe of Deſcent, that no Act, no Crime, no Attainder of Treaſon, can bar the next of Blood from being King in the inſtant of Time, his Predeceſſor does not ſo much dye, as by a State-*Metempſychoſis* tranſmit his Life, his Breath, or his Soul into the Noſtrils, the Body of his Succeſſor.

For Hereditary Monarchy being (as it has been clearly demonſtrated) an immediate Ordinance of GOD, founded in the Prime Laws of Nature; and the Laws of GOD and Nature being (as all *Chriſtians* acknowledge) abſolutely immutable, it is a Madneſs to think, that any Act of Parliament can change this unchangeable Law, or, with the leaſt Color of Juſtice, alter the Right of Succeſſion.

This was well known to all our ancient Parliaments, that were neither over-awed by any prevailing Faction ſeduced by deſigning Intreaguers, nor yet vainly flattered themſelves with an Omnipotent Power to create and annihilate Kings: In one of which the States of the Realm unanimouſly anſwered King *Edward* the IIId. asking their Advice in matters, relating to the Crown: *That they could not conſent to any thing in Parliament, that tended to the Diſheriſon of the King, and his Heirs, or the Crown, whereunto they were ſworn.* From whence Sir *Edward Cook* concludes, *That it is a Law and Cuſtom of Parliament, that no King can alien the Crown from the right Heir, tho by conſent of the Lords*

Lords and Commons. And elſewhere affirming King *Johns* Reſignation of the Crown to the Pope to have been utterly void, he alledges this Reaſon: *Becauſe the Royal Dignity is an Inherent inſeparable to the Royal Blood of the King, deſcendable to the next of Blood to the King, and cannot be tranſferd to another.*

And altho by the Treaſons and Conſpiracies of ambitious, diſloyal, and deſigning Perſons, the Crown has now and then been transferred from one Family to another, yet does it appear in Story, that ſince the time of the *Norman* Conqueſt the right Heir was never yet kept out beyond the ſecond Deſcent. And to the Honor of *Engliſh* Parliaments we can aver, that never any Uſurper (tho armed with Power) laid claim to the Crown in Parliament, but by pretending to be of the Right Line; nor did ever the Parliament allow of ſuch Pretence, if falſe, but when awed by Fear and a vaſt Army. And whenever, the Terror of ſuch armed violence being removed, the true Heir was enabled to claim his Right, the Parliament, notwithſtanding all ſuch pretended Acts, readily ſubmitted

mitted themſelves to their legitimate Prince, as being bound thereunto by the Laws of GOD and Nature.

Thus altho *Henry*, Duke of *Lancaſter*, backt by an Army of fourty or fifty thouſand men, under Pretence of a feigned Title from *Edmund Crouchback*, forced his Natural Soveraign, King *Richard* the IId. firſt to reſign, and afterwards to be depoſed from his Crown, which, waving his former pretended Title, he cauſed to be entailed upon himſelf, his four Sons, and the Heirs of their Bodies, by Act of Parliament, whereby he thought to have ſecured it to his Poſterity for ever; Yet, notwithſtanding theſe cautious Proviſions, ſeconded by the Valor and prodigious Succeſs of that noble Prince *Henry* the Vth. when in the year 1460. this Entail was alledged againſt *Richard* Duke of *York*, laying claim in Parliament to the Crowns of *England* and *France*, as being the next Heir to *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, elder Brother to *John* of *Gaunt*, of whom the Houſe *Lancaſter* was deſcended, the Duke of *York* unanſwerably replied, *That, if King* Henry *the* IVth. *might have obtained the ſaid Crowns of* England

England *and* France *by Title of Inheritance, Deſcent, or Succeſſion, he neither needed, nor would have deſired, or made them to be granted to him in ſuch wiſe, as they be by that Act: Which* (ſaid he) *taketh no place, neither is of any force, or effect againſt him, that is right Inheritor of the ſaid Crowns, as accordeth with the Laws of GOD, and all Natural Laws.* Which Anſwer of the Duke of *York*, and his Claim to the Crown, was by the ſame Parliament expreſly recognized and declared to be *Good, True, Juſt, Lawful*, and *Sufficient*.

And when in the ſame year *Edward* Earl of *March*, eldeſt Son to the ſaid Duke of *York*, upon the death of his Father, took poſſeſſion of the Crown by the Name of King *Edward* the IVth. his Title was in full Parliament by all acknowledged in theſe Words: *Knowing alſo certainly, and without doubt and ambiguity, that by GODs Law, and the Law of Nature, He* (viz. the ſaid King *Edward*) *and none other, is, and ought to be true, Rightwiſe, and Natural Liege and Soveraign Lord: And that he was in right, from the Death of the ſaid Noble and Famous Prince his Father, very juſt King of the ſame Realm of* Eng-

England. And ſo little Reſpect was given to the aforementioned Act of Entail, that it was not ſo much as repealed, being eſteemed from the very beginning null and void in it ſelf. Nor indeed were any Acts of *Henry* the IVth. Vth. or VIth. (ſtiled **Kings in Deed and not of Right**) deemed to be in force, but ſuch, as were expreſly confirmed by *Edward* the IVth. in the ſame manner, as his Sacred Majeſty, now reigning, confirmed the judicial Proceedings of the late Uſurpation.

As little Succeſs had that Monſter of Nature, *Richard* Duke of *Glocester*, who, being by the Intereſt of ſeveral factious Lords choſen Protector to his Nephew, the young King *Edward* the Vth & having by that means gotten into his hands the military Force of the Nation, pretending, that the Children of his Brother King *Edward* the IVth. were illegitimate, laid claim to the Crown, which he not only entailed by Act of Parliament upon himſelf and his Iſſue, but the better to ſecure it in his Line, cauſed the Innocent young King, and his only Brother, the Duke of *York*, to be barbarouſly murthered in the Tower;

Tower; yet did he within three years loſe both his Crown and Life to *Henry* Earl of *Richmond*, on whom and his Heirs it was again by Act of Parliament entailed, which yet would little have availed him or his Poſterity, had he not prudently (acording to his promiſe, by which ſeveral of the Nobility were induced to aſſiſt him) married *Elizabeth*, eldeſt Daughter of King *Edward* the IVth. and immediate Heireſs of the Crown, whereby, happily turning his Uſurpation into a lawful Soveraignty, he ſecured himſelf in the Throne.

But that his Iſſue by any other Lady could not have had better Succeſs againſt the Princely Houſe of *York*, than *Adonijah* had againſt *Salomon*, may more than probably be preſumed, if we ſhall conſider, what Fate attended the many mad Acts, made by *Henry* the VIIIth about the Succeſſion.

This haughty Prince, whoſe capricious Humor none of his Parliaments durſt gainſay, having after above twenty years Cohabitation divorced his Queen, a chaſt and vertuous Lady, did in the twenty fifth year of his Reign diſinherit by Act of Parliament the Lady

Lady *Mary* his Daughter by her, ſettling the Crown by ſpecial Words, for want of Iſſue Male, on his Iſſue Female by the Lady *Anne Bullen*: To the obſervation of which Act the whole Nation was obliged by an Oath, impoſed the year following, the Refuſal of which Oath was adjudged *Miſpriſion of Treaſon*. And yet in the twenty eighth year of his Reign he baſtardized and made illegitimate to all intents and purpoſes (as he had done formerly the Iſſue of Queen *Katherine*) the Iſſue betwixt him and the Lady *Anne Bullen*, barring them to *claim, challenge, or demand any Inheritance, as Lawful Heir, or Heirs to him by Lineal Deſcent*; making it Treaſon for any one (notwithſtanding their former Oath) by *Words, Writing, Printing, or any other exterior Act directly, or indirectly to call any of the Children, born under the unlawful Marriages of* Katherine *and* Anne Bullen, *legitimate*; and enacting, that in caſe he had no Iſſue by *Jane* (his then Queen) he might diſpoſe of the Crown to whatſoever perſon or perſons, he pleaſed, the whole Nation being bound to the obſervance of this Law by the Sanctimony of an Oath,

Oath, the refuſal whereof was made High Treaſon. After all this, in the thirty fifth year of his Reign he by another Act entailed the Crown on himſelf, Prince *Edward*, and the Princeſſes *Mary* and *Elizabeth*, (without repealing the former Acts, or taking the leaſt notice of their being ſo ſignally baſtardized) and for default of Heirs of their Bodies, on ſuch perſon or perſons, as he ſhould nominate by his Letters Patents under his Great Seal, or by his *laſt Will in writing, ſigned by his moſt Gracious Hand*, the whole Nation being again ſworn to obſerve his pleaſure herein: Conſequently whereunto he by ſuch his laſt Will and Teſtament ſolemnly bequeathed the Crown, upon failure of his own Iſſue, to the Houſe of *Suffolk*, being the Iſſue of his younger Siſter *Mary*, excluding by that means from the Throne (as much as in him, and his Act of Parliament lay) the Iſſue of his Elder Siſter, whoſe *Royal Blood* he affirmed *the cold Air of* Scotland *to have frozen up in the North.* Yet, when after the Death of his three Children, reigning ſucceſſively, theſe diſinheriting Statutes (the laſt whereof was confirmed by Act of Parliament

ment in the firſt year of Queen *Elizabeth*, in whoſe thirteenth year there paſſed alſo an Act, That it ſhould be Treaſon, during her Life, and a *Præmunire* afterwards, to aſſert, that the Imperial Crown of *England* could not be diſpoſed of by Act of Parliament) came to the Teſt, they had not the Honor to be repealed, but were held null and void from the beginning, as being notoriouſly repugnant to the Laws both of GOD and Nature, and the common Cuſtoms and Conſtitutions of the Realm. And the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and the Commons aſſembled in Parliament (notwithſtanding all theſe unrepealed Acts) having confeſt the *Ineſtimable and unſpeakable Bleſſings* accrewing from the *Union of* England *and* Scotland *under one Imperial Crown in the Perſon of King* James, *lineally, rightfully, and lawfully deſcended of the moſt Excellent Lady* Margaret, *Eldeſt Daughter of the moſt renowned King* Henry *the VIIth. and the high and noble Princeſs Queen* Elizabeth, *his Wife, eldeſt Daughter of King* Edward *the IVth.* proceeded to the Recognition of his Title in theſe Words: *We, being bounden thereunto both by the Laws of GOD and*

and Man, do recognize and acknowledge that immediately upon the Diſſolution and Deceaſe of Elizabeth, *late Queen of* England, *the Imperial Crown of the Realm of* England, *and all the Kingdoms, Dominions, and Rights, belonging to the ſame, did by inherent Birthright, and lawful and undoubted Succeſſion deſcend and come to your moſt Excellent Majeſty, as being lineally, juſtly, and lawfully next and ſole Heir of the Blood Royal of this Realm: And that by the Goodneſs of GOD Almighty, and lawful Rights of Deſcent Your Majeſty is under one Imperial Crown of the Realms and Kingdoms of* England, Scotland, France, *and* Ireland *the moſt potent and mighty King. And thereunto we moſt humbly and faithfully do ſubmit and oblige our ſelves, our Heirs, and our Poſterities for ever.* And ſome years after it was by all the Judges of *England* expreſly reſolved in *Calvins* Caſe: *That King* James *his Title to the Crown was founded upon the Laws of Nature,* viz. *by inherent Birthright, and Deſcent from the Blood-Royal of this Realm.*

All Acts of Parliament then for excluding from the throne the next Heir of the Blood Royal, on whom the

the Crown deſcends by the *Laws of God and Nature*, by *inherent Birthright*, and *undoubted Succeſſion*, being *ipſo facto* null and void, it is not to be wondred, that his preſent Sacred Majeſty ſo conſtantly declared, that he would never conſent to alter the Deſcent of the Crown in the right Line, as not being willing, by ſhewing his People a Method of diſpoſing the Succeſſion, to ſhake at the ſame time the Title of his own Poſſeſſion: Since it is evident, that the Heir apparent, or next of Blood hath the ſame Right to enjoy the Crown after his Predeceſſors Death, as the Actual Poſſeſſor hath to it, during his Life; and conſequently, that the People have no more Right to diſinherit the one, than to depoſe the other.

Nor can any man be blamed for apprehending, that ſome ſuch thing might be aimed at by the firſt Projectors of the Bill for excluding his Royal Highneſs from the Succeſſion, if it ſhall be conſidered, that the chief Sticklers for that Bill inſiſted on the Depoſition of *Edward* the IId. contrived by a leacherous Queen and diſloyal Parliament, and that of *Richard*

ard the IId. who was for pretended Miſgovernment removed from the Throne by a Parliament, over-awed by an Army of fourty or fifty thouſand men, and *Henry* the IVth. ſubſtituted in his ſtead; that during the Heat of theſe debates, the Anſwer to the *Great and Weighty Conſiderations* (wherein, beſides many other treaſonable Paſſages, the Author has theſe expreſs words: *I hope there are very few in this Nation, that do not think it in the Power of the People to depoſe a Prince, who really undertakes to alienate his Kingdom, or give it up into the hands of another Soveraign Power, or really acts the Deſtruction or general Calamity of his People*) was publickly ſold before the very Doors of Parliament; and that the ſame Houſe of Commons, which was with ſo much eagerneſs hurried on to the paſſing of that Bill, was alſo prevailed upon to importune his Majeſty in behalf of the publiſher of that pernicious Appeal from the Country to the City, which by affirming, that *No Government, but Monarchy, can in* England *ever ſupport or favor Popery*, endeavors not only to deſtroy the King, but even Kingſhip it ſelf.

But

But well fare the noble Lords of *England*, who (with a *Nolumus Leges Angliæ mutari*) rejected that abominable Bill, which, tho it would, if paſſed into an Act, have been of no greater Force or Validity, than the Wild Ordinances of the Rebellious Parliament of 1640. yet might it (as they were) be made uſe of to induce the deluded Multitude to hazard their Souls, Bodies, and Eſtates by a damnable Oppoſition of their Lawful Soveraign, and to raiſe up a Conteſt in this Nation, not unlike to the old *Yorkiſh* and *Lancaſtrian* Quarrel, the Thoughts whereof every good man muſt certainly dread, when he ſhall ſeriouſly conſider, how that War laſted about ſixty years, and coſt the Kingdom its whole Treaſure, and the Lives of above two hundred thouſand of the Commons, beſides ſeveral Kings and Princes, and Nobles without number.

So ſenſible was the renowned Queen *Elizabeth* of thoſe fatal Conſequences, which neceſſarily attend ſo unjuſt an Act, as that of altering the Succeſſion, that, altho for Reaſons obvious enough (and needleſs here to be menti-

mentioned) ſhe yeilded to paſs an Act, whereby it was made Treaſon to ſay, that ſhe and her Parliament could not diſpoſe of the Crown, yet could ſhe never be brought to give her Conſent to the actual diſpoſing thereof, tho the next Heir, then alive, was not only a Papiſt, but her own Rival to the Throne. Nay ſhe was ſo averſe to any ſuch Act, that (as *Camden* tells us) *She never heard any thing more unwillingly, than that the Title of Succeſſion ſhould be called into queſtion. And therefore ſhe ſent Mr.* Thornton *Reader of Law in* Lincolns-Inn, *to the Tower, becauſe in his Reading he called in queſtion the Queen of* Scots *Title to the Crown.* And when the Lord Keeper *Bacon* was accuſed by the Earl of *Leiceſter* for having intermedled againſt the Queen of *Scots* Right to the Succeſſion, and for being privy to a Book, wherein *Hales* went about to derive the Title of the Crown of *England*, in caſe the Queen ſhould die without Iſſue, to the Houſe of *Suffolk*, *Hales* was therefore committed to the Tower, and *Bacon*, tho denying it, was not without great difficulty reſtored to favor. So likewiſe, when in the eighth year of her Reign, *Bell Mounſon*,

Mounſon, aud a great Number of the Houſe of Commons, thought it their Right, as Repreſentatives of the whole Kingdom, whereof they do not in reality repreſent the ſixth part, to decide & ſettle the Succeſſion, the Queen by a Princelike Speech in the Parliament-Houſe ſpeedily ſuppreſſed their Inſolence. In like manner when in the thirty fifth year of her Reign Mr. *Peter Wentworth* and Sir *Henry Bromley* delivered a Petition to the Lord Keeper, deſiring the Lords of the Upper Houſe to be Suppliants with them of the Lower to Her Majeſty for entailing the Succeſſion of the Crown, for which they had a Bill ready drawn, the Queen highly diſpleaſed hereat, charged her Councel to call the Parties before them: Whereupon Sir *Thomas Henage*, ſending for them, commanded them to forbear the Parliament, and not to go out of their ſeveral Lodgings. They were after called before the Lord Treaſurer, Lord *Buckhurſt*, and Sir *Thomas Henage*, by whom *Wentworth* was committed to the Tower, Sir *Henry Bromley*, and other Members of the Houſe of Commons, to whom he had imparted the matter, being ſent to the

Fleet

Fleet. So careful was this prudent Queen to keep the People from preſuming to intermeddle with the Succeſſion.

The ſame Conſideration, that the *Altering or Diverting the Succeſſion* in an hereditary Monarchy, where *the Kings (deriving their Royal Power from GOD Almighty alone) do ſucceed lineally* to the Crown, *according to the known Degrees of Proximity in Blood, cannot be attempted without involving the Subjects in Perjury and Rebellion, and expoſing of them to all the Fatal and Dreadful Conſequences of a Civil War,* not only cauſed the Eſtates of *Scotland* in their very laſt Seſſions of Parliament, *from an hearty and ſincere Sence of their Duty to recognize, acknowledge, and declare, That the Right to the Imperial Crown of that Realm is (by the Inherent Right, and the Nature of the Monarchy, as well as by the Fundamental and unalterable Laws of the Realm) tranſmitted and devolved by a Lineal Succeſſion according to the Proximity of Blood; And that upon the Death of the King or Queen, who actually Reigns, the Subjects of that Kingdom are bound by Law, Duty and Allegiance to obey the next immediate and*

lawful Heir, either Male or Female, upon whom the Right and Adminiſtration of Government is immediately devolved; And that no Difference in Religion, nor no Law, nor Act of Parliament, made, or to be made, can alter or divert the Right of Succeſſion and Lineal Deſcent of the Crown to the neareſt and lawful Heir, according to the Degrees aforeſaid; nor can ſtop or hinder them in the full, free and actual Adminiſtration of the Government, according to the Laws of the Kingdom; but obliged alſo His Majeſty, for the preſervation of the Peace and Tranquillity of that Kingdom, *with Advice and Conſent of the ſaid Eſtates of Parliament, to declare, That it is High Treaſon in any of the Subjects of that Kingdom, by Writing, Speaking, or any other manner of way, to endeavor the Alteration, Suſpenſion, or Diverſion of the ſaid Right of Succeſſion, or the debarring the next lawful Succeſſor from the immediate, actual, full, and free Adminiſtration of the Government.*

Nor is it to be doubted, but that the Commons of *England*, who now begin to grow ſenſible of thoſe Precipices of Ruine, whereinto they were ready to tumble

tumble through the Contrivances of of thoſe malicious Incendiaries, that by terrifying the People with panick Fears of Popery and Arbitrary Power endeavoured to kindle a Fire of Rebellion in this Nation, will, whenever it ſhall pleaſe His Majeſty to call a Parliament, ſhew themſelves no leſs Zealous (than the *Scots* have done) to aſſiſt and defend (according to their Oaths) the Kings Rights and Priviledges, the chiefeſt whereof, upon which all the reſt depend, as on a Corner Stone, is the unalterable Hereditarineſs of the Monarchy, and thereby defeat the Deſignes of thoſe curſed *Achitophels*, who labor by involving us in Confuſion to eſtabliſh their beloved Democracy, the very worſt of Tyrannies.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the preſent Monarch of Great Britain: *His Name, Surname, Genealogy, Birth, Baptiſm, Court, Education, Departure out of* England, *Coming into* Scotland, *Eſcape from* Worceſter, *Reſtauration, Coronation, and Marriage.*

Name. THe now-reigning Monarch of *Great Britain* is CHARLES, the Second of that Name. His Name of Baptiſm, in Latine written *Carolus*, in Engliſh CHARLES, in the *German* Language **Karle**, is contracted from **Car-eal**, which is it ſelf an Abbreviation of the old *Teutonick* **Gar-edel**, and ſignifies *All* or *wholly Noble*. Not improperly then was this Name given to this Prince, whoſe Subjects may juſtly glory in the Enjoyment of that Happineſs, for which *Salomon* pronounces a Land bleſſed, that their *King is the Son of Nobles*.

Surname. Tho Surnames are neither uſed by Soveraign Princes, nor neceſſary to them, as they are to other inferior perſons,

ſons, whoſe Surnames preſerve the Memory of their Relations and Families; yet as *Bourbon* and *Auſtria*, which were but the Poſſeſſions of their Progenitors, are now generally eſteemed the Surnames of the Preſent *French* and *Spaniſh* Royal Familyes: So *Stuart* or *Steward*, the Abbreviation of the *Saxon* Word Stedewaꝛd, ſignifying the ſame, as *Locumtenens* in *Latin*, and *Lieutenant* in *French*, which was originally but the Name of Office to *Walter* (Son of *Fleance* by the Daughter of *Gruffyth ap Lhewelyn* King of *Northwales*, and Progenitor to *Robert* the IId. King of *Scotland*, from whom our preſent King is deſcended) who was by King *Malcolm Canmore* created *Grand Seneſchal* or *High Steward* of *Scotland*, has by Preſcription of Time and long Vulgar Error ſo far prevailed, as to be accounted the Surname of the now-Royal Family of *Great Britain*, and of many other Families, deſcended from him. Nor is this Name unfit for any King, as being in his Kingdom the Steward, Lieutenant, or Vicegerent of Almighty GOD.

Our Soveraign Lord the King, now reigneth. Genealogy.

reigning does for Royal Extraction, and long Line of juſt Deſcent excell all the Monarchs of the *Chriſtian*, if not of the whole World, being lineally and lawfully deſcended from, and by Right of Primogeniture next Heir unto the *Britiſh*, *Saxon*, *Norman*, and *Scotiſh* Kings and Princes of this Iſland, his Grandfather King *James*, who by along Deſcent of Royal Anceſtors was was derived from *Malcolm Canmor* King of the *Scots*, and the Lady *Margaret* his Wife, Siſter and Sole Heir of *Edgar Atheling*, the laſt ſurviving Prince of the *Engliſh Saxons*, joyning the *Saxon* and *Scotiſh* Titles to the *Britiſh* and *Norman*, already united in the Perſon and Poſterity of *Edward* the IVth. King of *England*.

He is from the firſt *Britiſh* Kings the hundred thirty ninth, from the *Scotiſh*, in a continued ſucceſſion for almoſt two thouſand years, the hundred and ninth, from the *Saxon* the forty ſixth, ſince the *Norman* Conqueſt the twenty ſixth, from the Uniting of the Royal Families of *York* and *Lancaſter* the eighth, and ſince the Union of *England* and *Scotland* the third ſole Monarch.

He

He is the first, that was born Prince or Heir apparent of *Great Britain*, and hath in his possession larger Dominions than any of his Royal Ancestors.

His Father was *Charles* the Martyr, and his Mother the Princess *Henrietta Maria*, Daughter to *Henry* the *Great*, Sister to *Lewis* the XIIIth. and Aunt to the present *Lewis* the XIVth. most *Christian* Kings, a Lady, who needeth no other Character, than what is found in the seventh Chapter of that unimitable Book, compiled by him, that best knew her. From these two Royal Stocks, he hath in his Veins some of all the Royal Blood of *Europe* concentred.

This most Excellent Prince was born on the twenty ninth of *May*, 1630. at the Royal Palace of St. *James's*, near *Westminster*, over which there was the same day at noon by thousands seen a Star impending, and soon after the Sun suffered an Eclipse, which was by some even at that time regarded as a sad *Omen*, that the Power of this Prince should for a while be eclipsed and that some Subject, signified by the Star, Birth.

Star, ſhould have more than ordinary Splendor.

Baptiſm. On the twenty ſeventh of *June* following he was baptized by Dr. *William Laud*, then Biſhop of *London*, afterwards Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who was in the year of our Lord 1644. by a pretended Ordinance of the rebellious long Parliament, barbarouſly murthered for his Fidelity to his Soveraign.

His God-fathers were his two Uncles the moſt *Chriſtian* King *Lewis* the XIIIth. and *Frederick*, Prince Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, then called King of *Bohemia*, repreſented by the Duke of *Richmond*, and Marqueſs of *Hamilton*, his Godmother being his Grandmother *Maria de Medicis*, then Queen-Mother of *France*, whoſe Subſtitute was the Dutcheſs of *Richmond*. He had for his Governeſs *Mary* Counteſs of *Dorſet*, Wife to *Edward* Earl of *Dorſet*.

Court. In *May*, 1638. he received the Order of Knighthood, being immediately after made Knight of the Garter, and inſtalled at *Windſor*. About which time.

time he was by Order, not Creation, first called Prince of *Wales*, having all the Revenews of that Principality, with divers others Lands annexed, and the Earldom of *Chester* granted unto him, and holding his Court apart from the King.

Education.

In the eighth year of his Age being taken from the Charge of his Women, he had for Governor *William*, then Earl, afterward Marquess, and lately Duke of *Newcastle*, and after him *Thomas*, late Earl of *Berkshire*; and for Tutor or Preceptor Dr. *Brian Duppa*, then Dean of *Christ-Church* in *Oxford*, soon after Bishop of *Chichester*, after that of *Salisbury*, and lately of *Winchester*.

In *October* 1642. the two Houses having, out of their superabundant Loyalty, and great Zeal for the preservation of their Soveraign, raised an Army to divest him of his Soveraignty, he was with his Father at the Battel of *Edge-Hill*, and not long after was at *Oxford* committed to the Care of *William* Marquess of *Hertford*, whom, after his own happy Restauration, he restored to the Dignity and

Pre-

Precedency of Duke of *Somerset*.

In the fifteenth year of his Age he was sent by his Father into the West of *England*, to perfect an Association, begun there in the end of the foregoing Summer. And not long after there was a Marriage proposed between him and the *Infanta Joanna*, eldest Daughter to the King of *Portugal*, since deceased.

Departure out of *England*.

The year following, *Barnstable* being taken, and *Exeter* besieged by the Rebels, he withdrew from *Devonshire* into *Cornwall*, from whence he passed into the Isle of *Scilly*, and thence to the Queen his Mother, being at St. *Germains* near *Paris*.

In the year 1648. a Considerable part of the Royal Navy, encouraged thereto by Captain *Batten*, formerly Vice-Admiral to the Earl of *Warwick*, being put into his Power, he endeavored to rescue the King his Father out of the impious hands of his rebellious Subjects. But failing of Success, he was forced to retire to his Sister at the *Hague*, where not many Months after upon the sad News of the barbarous Murther of his Royal Father, he was

was first saluted King, & soon after proclaimed in *Scotland* and most Towns of *Ireland*, being yet under nineteen years of Age.

In the latter end of the year 1649. he received, being then in *Jersey*, a Message from the Committee of Estates of *Scotland*, brought by Mr. *George Windram* of *Liberton*, and the *March* following met the *Scotch* Commissioners at *Breda* in *Holland*, and about the beginning of *June* 1650. being invited by a solemn Message from the Estates of that Kingdom, he took Shipping at *Scheveling*, and having escaped the danger both of a sudden Storm, that cast him upon certain *Danish* Islands, and of a Fleet of *English* Vessels, sent out under *Popham* to intercept his passage, arrived at the *Spey* in the North of *Scotland*, from whence all along his way to *Edenborough* he was entertained with the general Joy of the People, several of the Towns, by which he passed, making him considerable Presents. On the fifteenth of *July*, he was again solemnly proclaimed King at *Edenborough* Cross, and was the first of *January* Coming into *England*.

nuary following crowned at *Scoon*, the accuſtomed place for Coronation of the Kings of *Scotland*.

Eſcape from *Worceſter*.

Being invaded by an Army from *England*, he was forced to quit that Kingdom, and try his Fortune in this which he entred the ſixth of *Auguſt* 1651. and on the twenty ſecond of the ſame Month came to *Worceſter*, where on the third of *September* was fought that fatal Battel, in which tho his Majeſty acted with ſuch marvellous Gallantry and Conduct, that he wan applauſe from his very Enemies, yet he unfortunately loſt the Day, and his whole Army, himſelf not without a Providence, unparalleld in Hiſtory, eſcaping the Hands of his blood-thirſty Enemies, who not only by publick Act promiſed a Sum of Money to thoſe that ſhould diſcover him, but likewiſe threatned the Penalty of High Treaſon to any, that ſhould conceal him. For being in the very Heart *England*, and a thouſand pounds ſet upon his head, he was forced to wander about in diſguiſe for ſix Weeks, and to appear in many Places and Companies, before he could find a fit opportunity of Tranſpor-

Tranſportation. During which time tho he were ſeen and known to many perſon, divers whereof were exceſſively indigent, and therefore liable to be tempted by the propoſed Reward, divers of the Female Sex, and ſo not only moſt unapt to retain a Secret, but alſo very ſubject to be terrified by the threatned Penalty, and divers beſides all this of the *Roman* Religion, which alone (the very Principles thereof having been alwayes clamored againſt, as reputed to teach nothing but Treachery and Diſloyalty to Princes, and the Lawfulneſs of breaking Faith with Hereticks) might have made his Majeſty afraid to truſt them; yet was he ſtill moſt miraculouſly preſerved, and at length by one *Teterſhal*, ſince a Captain in his Majeſties Navy, (whoſe Wife, ſuſpecting the Buſineſs, was ſo far from diſencouraging him, that ſhe ſaid, *She cared not, if ſhe and her little ones begged their Bread, ſo the King were in ſafety*) tranſported from *Brightemſtead* neer *Shoram* in *Suſſex* to *Feccam* neer *Hauvre de Grace* in *Normandy*, whence he poſted directly to *Rouen*, and having thence diſpatched Letters to the *French* Court, he was met by

the Queen his Mother, the Duke of *Orleans*, and many Perſons of Quality, and by them conducted to *Paris*, where with his Royal Brothers, and divers of the *Britiſh* Nobility, Clergy, and Gentry, he was for ſome years received and treated as King of *Great Britain*.

There by his Excellent Wiſdom and Addreſs, mediating with the Prince of *Conde*, and the Duke of *Lorrain*, then in the Head of two great Armies againſt the *French* King, he quenched the newly-kindled Fire of an univerſal Rebellion, raiſed againſt him, and was a Means of reſtoring Cardinal *Mazarine*, who had for fear of the Princes of the Blood withdrawn himſelf to *Colen*, to his former Authority and Greatneſs.

In the year 1654. His Majeſty, underſtanding, that upon a Treaty of Peace between the *French* King and *Oliver Cromwel*, then ſtiling himſelf Protector of the Commonwealth of *England*, *Scotland* and *Ireland*, one of the chiefeſt Articles, inſiſted upon by the Uſurper, was the excluding of him with his Relations and Followers out of *France*, to prevent a ceremonious Expulſi-

Expulſion, voluntarily departed thence into *Germany*, making his firſt place of Reſidence at the *Spaw*, whence after a few Moneths he went to *Colen*, where was diſcovered the Correſpondence between *Thurloe*, *Cromwels* Secretary, and *Manning*, one of the Kings Secretaries Clerks, who, for giving weekly Intelligence to the Uſurper of the Tranſactions in his Majeſties Court, was deſervedly ſhot to death.

After the Rupture between *Cromwel* and the King of *Spain*, he was by *Don John* of *Auſtria*, who, being Governor of the *Low-Countrys* for his *Catholick* Majeſty, ſent the Count of *Fuenſaldagne* to offer him in the name of the *Spaniſh* King all poſſible Service and Aſſiſtance, invited into *Flanders*, where making his Reſidence for the moſt part at *Bruges*, he continued till a little before Sir *George Booths* Riſing in *Cheſhire*, when he removed privately from *Bruxels* to *Calais*, whence having notice from my Lord *Mordant* of the diſappointment of much of the deſign, he went to *Bulloign*, and thence to *Rouen*, whither Dr. *Alleſtry* bringing him News of Sir *Georges* being in Arms, he went thence by *Caen* to St. *Maloes*, where being in prepa-

preparation of a Veſſel to tranſport him into *England*, he received the fatal Tidings of *Booths* Defeat.

Thence his Majeſty went to *Fontarabia*, to be preſent at the Treaty of Peace, managed upon the Borders between *France* and *Spain* by the two chief Miniſters of thoſe two Kings, where he was with all imaginable reſpect entertained by *Don Lewis de Haro*, Plenipotentiary for his *Catholick* Majeſty, from whom he received large Promiſes of Aſſiſtance both with men and money, and a Preſent of twenty thouſand Crowns for defraying the Expences of his Journey.

There receiving Advice from the Lord *Mordant* of the Diſorders in *England*, he returned through *France* toward *Bruxels*, ſtaying by the way ſome few dayes with his Royal Mother at *Paris*.

Reſtauration. In the year 1660. Perceiving a general Inclination in his Subjects to receive him, he providently, upon Advice ſent him by General *Monk*, the late Duke of *Albemarl*, removed from *Bruxels* to *Breda* within the Dominions of the *United Netherlands*, whence he

he ſent Letters, bearing date the fourteenth of *April*, to the Lords, to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, to the Generals *Monk* and *Mountague*, and to the City of *London*, together with a gracious Declaration for the compoſing and quieting the minds of his Subjects. Theſe were on the firſt of *May*, read in Parliament, and on the eighth he was with great Solemnity proclaimed in the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*. The Tenor of the Proclamation, agreed upon by the Lords and Commons, clearly expreſſing the Hereditarineſs of this Monarchy, and conſequently the unalterableneſs of the Succeſſion, is, as followeth.

Altho it can no way be doubted, but that His Majeſties Right and Title to his Crown and Kingdoms is, and was every way compleated by the Death of his moſt Royal Father of Glorious Memory without the Ceremony or Solemnity of a Proclamation: Yet ſince Proclamations in ſuch caſes have alwayes been uſed to the end that all good Subjects might, upon this occaſion, teſtify their Duty and Reſpect; And ſince the armed Violence, and other the Calamities of many years laſt paſt, have hitherto deprived Us of any ſuch

ſuch Opportunity, wherein we might expreſs our Loyalty and Allegiance to his Majeſty; We therefore, the Lords and Commons now aſſembled in Parliament, together with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Councel of the City of London, *and other Freemen of this Kingdom now preſent, do, according to Our Duty and Allegiance, heartily, joyfully, and unanimouſly acknowledge and proclaim, That upon the Deceaſe of Our late Soveraign Lord King* CHARLES, *the Imperial Crown of the Realm of* England, *and of all the Kingdoms, Dominions, and Rights belonging to the ſame, did by inherent Birthright, and lawful and undoubted Succeſſion, deſcend and come to his Moſt Excellent Majeſty* CHARLES *the Second; as being lineally, juſtly, and lawfully next Heir of the Royal Blood of this Realm; and that by the Goodneſs and Providence of Almighty* GOD, *He is of* England, Scotland, France, *and* Ireland, *the moſt Potent, Mighty, and Undoubted King: And thereunto we moſt humbly and faithfully do ſubmit, and oblige Our Selves, our Heirs and Poſterities.*

May the twenty third his Majeſty, after a magnificent entertainment at the *Hague*

Hague by the States of *Holland*, and an humble Invitation of *English* Commiſſioners, ſent by the Lords and Commons, then aſſembled at *Weſtminſter*, embarkt at *Scheveling*, and with a gallant Fleet, and gentle Gale of Wind landed at *Dover* on the twenty fifth and on the twenty ninth, being his Birth day, his Majeſty, then juſt thirty years of Age, entred into *London*, accompanied with his two Brothers, attended by moſt of the Nobility and Gentry of the three Kingdoms, and received with the moſt Univerſal Joy, Acclamations, and Magnificence, that could poſſibly be expreſt.

This wonderful Reſtauration of his Majeſty after ſo many years Diſpoſſeſſion, his irreconcileable Enemies, who were fully poſſeſt of the Government, being ſupported by an Army of thirty thouſand experienced and victorious Souldiers in *England*, all foſtered up in an Averſion to Monarchy, beſides the trained *Militia* of the Nation, amounting to a far greater number, and wholly conſiſting of choſen men of the like Principles, attempted and effected without Blood, Blows, Bargain, or Obligation to any forreign

reign Prince or Potentate, by the Generoſity and Prudence of that Noble Captain *George*, late Duke of *Albemarl*, whoſe Courage and Conduct this preſent Age cannot but admire, and our Poſterity will with difficulty believe, was ſo ſignal a Diſpenſation of Divine Providence, which not only raiſed up that Noble Inſtrumont, but darted likewiſe on a ſudden into the Hearts of the People a Deſire of their Soveraign, which, like Lightning, running over his Kingdoms, made them burn with eagerneſs for his return, that the Great *Turk*, hearing thereof, openly declared, that, if he were to change his Religion, he would adore and worſhip the GOD of the King of *Great Brtain*.

Coronation. On the two and twentieth of *April*, 1661. His Majeſty, according to the ancient Cuſtom of his Royal Predeceſſors, made a glorious and ſplendid Cavalcade from the Tower to *Weſtminſter*, where the next day, being the Feſtival of St. *Geopge*, he was Crowned with great Ceremony by Dr. *William Juxon* then Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, to whom that Office belonged in right of his See, the

the Coronation-Sermon being preached by Dr. *George Morley*, then Biſhop of *Worceſter*, now of *Wincheſter*.

On the eighth of *May* following began a Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, as remarkable for their Loyalty and Zealous Affection to the Service of their Soveraign, as that of 1640. is notorious for Diſloyalty and Sedition. In this Parliament were condemned, as illegal, and deſtructive to the Government, all thoſe Factious and Antimonarchical Doctrins, firſt broached by the Rebels of the late times, to juſtify their audacious Impieties, and now again revived (no doubt for the ſame purpoſe) by the ſcurrilous Pamphletiers of this our Age, who by their more than *Jeſuitical* Equivocations eluding the plain and expreſs Words of an Oath, purpoſely framed to countermine and prevent ſuch ſeditious Opinions and Practices, which, as they formerly have, ſo may again be made uſe of to involve us in Confuſion and Miſery, endeavor (as much as in them lies) to render all Profeſſion and Promiſes of Allegiance and Fidelity, made by Subjects to their Prince, invalid, and of none effect.

On

Marry-age. On the twenty eighth of the ſame Month His Majeſty declared to his Parliament his Intention to marry the *Infanta* of *Portugal*, who accordingly in *May* 1662. being landed at *Portſmouth*, was there eſpouſed unto him by Dr. *Gilbert Sheldon*, then Biſhop of *London*, lately Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Of the Preſent Queen of Great Britain: *Her Name, Genealogy, Birth, Marriage, Portion, Jointure, and Arms.*

THE preſent Queen of *Great Britain* is *Donna* CATHARINA Infanta of *Portugal*. Her Name *Catharina*, originally *Greek*, ſignifies a Woman of excelling Purity and Chaſtity. Name.

She had for Father *John* the IVth. King of *Portugal*, and is lineally deſcended from *John* of *Gaunt*, King of *Caſtile* and *Leon*, Duke of *Lancaſter*, and fourth Son to *Edward* the IIId. King of *England*, as here appeareth. Genealogy.

John of *Gaunt*, beſides ſeveral other Children, had a Daughter, named

|

Philippa, married to *John the* Iſt. tenth King of *Portugal*, by whom ſhe had Iſſue

|

Edward,

Edward, the eleventh King of *Portugal*.

Alphonſo the Vth. [twelfth King of *Portugal*.

Emanuel, ſecond Son, who Succeeded his Elder Brother *John* the IId. dying Iſſueleſs, and was the fourteenth King of *Portugal*.

Edward Infante, ſixth Son.

Catharina, married to *John*, Duke of *Braganza*, and, after the Death of her Uncle *Henry* the ſeventeenth King of *Portugal*, true Heir to the Crown, from which ſhe was barred by the Arms of *Philip* the IId. King of *Spain*.

Duke of *Braganza*.

John Duke of *Bragarza*, who in the year 1640. recovered his Inheritance, and

and reigned over *Portugal* by the Name of *John* the IVth.

The Infanta *Donna Catharina*, Queen Conſort of *Great Britain*.

Her Majeſties Mother was *Donna Lucia*, Daughter of *Don Guſman el Bueno*, a *Spaniard*, Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, lineally deſcended from *Ferdinando de la Cerde*, and his Wife *Blanche*, Daughter to St. *Lewis*, King of *France*, who relinquiſhed to her his Right and Title to *Spain*, derived to him by his Mother *Blanche*, eldeſt Daughter and Heir of the *Spaniſh* King *Alphonſo*. She was a Lady of that admired Magnanimity and Prudence, that the King her Husband truſted ſo much of the Reins of Government to her maſculine and politick Spirit, as occaſioned a jeſting *Spaniard* to ſay: *That it was not the* Portugal *Force, but the* Spaniſh *Policy, which kept that Kingdom from the* Catholick *King*.

The Queen of *Great Britain* is the only Siſter of *Don Alphonſo* the VIth. the two and twentieth King of *Portugal*, born in the year 1642, and hath one Brother more, named *Don Pedro*

born 1648, and now called Prince Regent of *Portugal*.

Birth. She was born the fourteenth of *November* 1638, at *Villa Vicoſa* in *Portugal*, her Father, who (tho right Heir to the Crown of *Portugal*) was then only Duke of *Braganza*, being the moſt potent Subject in *Europe*: for a third part of *Portugal* was even at that time holden of him in vaſſallage.

Marriage. Having been moſt carefully and piouſly educated by Mother, ſhe was at the Age of two and twenty deſired in marriage by *Charles* the IId. King of *Great Britain*: And the Marriage, not long after concluded by the Negotiation of Sir *Richard Fanſhaw*, Ambaſſador of his Majeſty of *Great Britain* in the Court of *Portugal*, and of *Franceſco de Melo*, Conde *de Ponte*, Marquis *de Sande*, Extraordinary Ambaſſador from the King of *Portugal*, being ſolemnized at *Lisbon*, on the twenty third of *April*, 1662. being the Feſtival of St. *George*, Patron both of *England* and *Portugal*, ſhe embarkt for *England*, and was by his Excellency *Edward*

Edward Earl of *Sandwich*, Vice-Admiral of *England*, ſafely conducted by a Squadron of Ships to *Portſmouth*, where being met by the King, ſhe was remarried to him.

From *Portſmouth* ſhe was by his Majeſty brought to *Hampton-Court*, where ſhe continued till the three and twentieth of *Auguſt* following, when coming up thence by Water, ſhe was with great Pomp and Magnificence received at *Chelſey* by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, who waited on her thence by Water to *Whitehal*.

The Portion, brought by her Majeſty, was eight hundred Millions of *Reas*, or two Millions of *Cruſadoes*, amounting to about three hundred thouſand Pounds *Sterling*; the City of *Tangier* on the Coaſt of *Africk*; and the Iſle of *Bombaim* nere *Goa* in the *Eaſt-Indies*; together with a Priviledg, that any Subjects of the King of *Great Britain* may trade freely in the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-India* Plantations, belonging to the *Portugueſes*. Portion.

Her Jointure, agreed upon by the Articles of Marriage, is thirty thou- Jointure.

ſand Pounds *Sterling per Annum*, to which the King, as a Teſtimony of his great Affection to her, has added ten thouſand Pounds *per Annum* more.

Arms. Her Arms, as Daughter of *Portugal*, are *Argent*, five *Scutcheons Azure Croſswiſe*, each *Scutcheon* charged with five *Beſants Argent Salterwiſe*, with a *Point Sable*. The *Border Gules*, charged with ſeven *Caſtles*, *Or*. This Coat was firſt worn by *Don Alphonſo*, the firſt King of *Portugal*, as well in memory of a ſignal Victory, obtained by him over five Kings of the *Moores*, as in honour of the five Wounds of our bleſſed Lord and Saviour, who juſt before the Battle appeared crucified unto him, a voice being heard, as once to *Conſtantin* the *Great*, *In hoc Signo vinces*: before which time the *Portugal* Arms were *Argent*, a *Croſſe Azure*.

Her Majeſty is a Perſonage, endowed with rare Perfections both of Mind and Body, a Lady of tranſcendent Piety, Modeſty, and Charity, and many other eminent Vertues.

CHAP

CHAP. XV.

Of the preſent Princes and Princeſſes of the Royal Blood of Great Britain.

THe Glorious Martyr CHARLES the Iſt. King of *Great Britain*, had by his Queen *Henrietta Maria*, Daughter to the moſt *Chriſtian* King *Henry* the IVth. four Sons and five Daughters. His Sons were,

1. CHARLES-JAMES, born at *Greenwich* on the thirteenth of *May*, 1629. baptized immediately by Dr. *Web*, one of his Majeſties Chaplains then in attendance, and afterwards a Biſhop in *Ireland*, lived not above two hours.

2. CHARLES, our preſent Soveraign, whom GOD long preſerve.

3. JAMES, now Duke of *York* and *Albany*.

4. HENRY, born at *Oatlands*, on the twentieth of *July* 1640. declared by his Royal Father, Duke of *Glocester*, but not ſo Created till the thirteenth of *May* 1659. He lived till above Twenty, and dyed unmarried the thirteenth of *September* 1660. almoſt four Months after His Majeſties happy Reſtauration, be-

reaving thereby theſe Nations of thoſe fair Hopes, which had been generally conceived from his Noble and Princely Endowments.

His Daughters were,

1. MARY, born the fourth of *November* 1631. married on the ſecond of *May* 1641. to Count *William* of *Naſſau*, Eldeſt Son to *Henry* Prince of *Orange*, to whom ſhe was, the *February* following, conveyed by her Mother into *Holland*. The Prince, her Husband, dyed in the beginning of *November*, 1650. leaving her Great with child; ſoon after whoſe Death ſhe was delivered of a Son, being the preſent Prince of *Orange*. Coming into *England* to ſee her Brother, whom the Divine Bounty had miraculouſly reſtored to his Throne, ſhe here ended her dayes the twenty-fourth of *December*, 1660. being little above nine and twenty Years of Age. Her Loſs, was exceedingly bewailed by All, who had the honour to know her, as being a Lady of univerſal Goodneſs and Charity.

2. ELIZABETH, born on the eight and twentieth of *December* 1635. a Princeſs of incomparable Virtues and Abilities, Dyed the eighth of *September*,

ber 1650 at *Carisbrook* in the Iſle of *Wight* of Grief for the Murther of her Father.

3. ANNE, Born the ſeventeenth of *March* 1636. Dyed very Young.

4. CATHARINE, Dyed almoſt as ſoon as Born.

5. HENRIETTA, Born at *Exeter* on the ſixteenth of *June* 1644. and at the ſurrendry of that Town brought to St. *James*'s, whence ſhe was afterwards, by her Governeſs the Lady *Dalkeith*, conveyed into *France* to the Queen her Mother, by whom ſhe was Educated in the *Roman* Religion. About the Age of Sixteen Years ſhe came with the Queen-Mother into *England*, whence after ſix Months ſtay, returning into *France*, ſhe was Married to *Philip* Duke of *Anjou*, only Brother to the preſent *French* King, by whom ſhe had Iſſue two Daughters, the Elder whereof is Queen of *Spain*, the Younger being deceaſed. She was a Princeſs of incomparable Beauty, and Gallantry of Spirit, and Dyed ſuddenly at *Paris*, in *June* 1670. being Six and Twenty Years of Age.

Of the Duke *of* York.

HIS preſent Majeſty of *Great Britain* having no Iſſue by his Queen, and having by his Royal Declaration (which he has cauſed to be Regiſtred in *Chancery*, and which not any good Subject, nor indeed not any rational Man, can chooſe but believe) ſolemnly proteſted, That he was never Married to any other Woman: The firſt Prince of the Blood, and Apparent (or, according to the new-coyn'd Diſtinction, Preſumptive) Heir of the Crown, is His Royal Highneſs, JAMES Duke of *York* and *Albany*, Earl of *Ulſter*, Knight of the moſt noble Order of the *Garter*, third Son of CHARLES the Iſt., and and ſole ſurviving Brother of our ſacred Soveraign CHARLES the IId.

He was Born at *Somerſet-Houſe* in the *Strand* on the fourteenth of *October*, 1633. & was immediately at the Court-Gates proclaimed Duke of *York*. On the four & twentieth of the ſame Month he was Baptized, having for God-fathers the King of *Denmark*, repreſented by the Earl of *Arundel*, and the Duke of

of *Orleans*, by Prince *Harcourt*, and for God-mother the Queen of *Bohemia*, whose Substitute was the Dutchess of *Buckingham*.

He was in his Infancy committed to the Government of the Lady *Hatton*, but when he grew up, had for Governor *Henry* Lord *Jermin*, now Earl of Saint *Albans*, and for Preceptor *Dr Broughton* of *Brazen-Nose* Colledge in *Oxford*.

In *February*, 1641. He was by the King his Father sent for from *London* to *Greenwich*, that he might accompany him thence to *York*.

Having been by special Command called Duke of *York* from his Birth, he was on the seven & twentieth of *January*, 1643. (having the Year before received the Order of the *Garter*) so Created by Letters Patents at *Oxford*; but without the Solemnities, usual in such Cases, the Iniquity of those Times not admitting thereof.

After the Surrendry of *Oxford* to the Rebels in the Year 1646. His Royal Highness was conveyed thence to *London*, and at St. *Jameses* committed with his Brother the Duke of *Gloucester* and his Sisters the Princesses *Elizabeth* and

Henrietta to the Tuition & Care of the Earl of *Northumberland* and his Lady.

Here he continued unto the three and twentieth of *April*, 1648. when having with Colonel *Bampfield*, ſent over purpoſely on that Deſign by the Queen his Mother, contrived an eſcape, after he had received the uſual Viſit of his Guardian the Earl of *Northumberland*, he lingred out the remainder of the Evening (that he might avoid the ſuſpicion of his Attendants) in the Chamber of his Brother the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and at a fit Opportunity retiring into the Garden, by the help of a Key, which he had borrowed of the Gardiner, he quickly got to the place, where he was expected by the Colonel, by whom, being diſguiſed in the Habit of a Girle, he was conveyed to *Dort*, whence he went immediately to his Siſter the Princeſs of *Orange*, and thence ſoon after to his Royal Mother then at *Paris*.

Thence he came to the Prince of *Wales*, his Brother, then endeavouring with part of the Navy, which had ſubmitted to him, to reſcue his Royal Father out of the Traitorous hands of the villanous Rebels, by whom he was kept Priſoner in the Iſle of *Wight*.

But

But that Deſign being diſappointed, his Royal Highneſs returned to the Court of *France*, where he continued, till he was about twenty Years of Age, when going into the Campagne, he performed under that great Commander, the Mareſchal *de Turenne*, ſuch eminent Services for the *French* King againſt the *Spaniſh* Forces in the *Netherlands*, that before the Age of one & twenty, he was made Lieutenant-General of the whole Army, and was by *Turenne* himſelf, then lying deſperately Sick, recommended to his moſt *Chriſtian* Majeſty, for the fitteſt perſon he could nominate to be General of his Army, as being ſo Noble, Valorous, and fortunate a Commander; that his Affairs could not (in all humane probability) but prove Succeſsful under his Conduct.

Notwithſtanding which, upon a Treaty between the *French* King, and the *Engliſh* Uſurper *Cromwel*, he was in the Year, 1655. (tho not without ſome Complements and Apologies for his Diſmiſſion) advertized to depart with all his Retinue out of the *French* Dominions by a prefixed time: Which he accordingly did, having been firſt viſited by the Mareſchal *de Turenne*, and divers other

ther *French* Grandees, as alſo by the Duke of *Modena*; then in *France* about ſome important Affairs.

His Royal Highneſs then, having taken His leave of the King and Court of *France*, and being attended by the Earl of St. *Albans*, and ſeveral other *Engliſh* Lords, took His Journey towards *Bruges* in *Flanders*, the Reſidence at that time of the King His Brother, who, having upon foreſight of the Event of the Treaty prudently withdrawn himſelf out of *France*, was by *Don John* of *Auſtria*, Governour of the *Low-Countries* for the King of *Spain*, ſolemnly invited into thoſe parts.

The Duke in his way touchd at *Bruxels*, where he was magnificently entertained by *Don John*, to whom he proffered his ſervice in the wars againſt the *French* King, then leagued with the *Engliſh* Rebels againſt *Spain*. Which being with many thanks accepted, his Magnanimity and Dexterity in Martial Affairs wan him ſo much eſteem, that a little before his Majeſties happy return he was offered in the Name of the *Spaniſh* King the high Dignity of Admiral of *Caſtile*.

In the year 1660, He returned with the

the King his Brother into *England*, of which being Lord High Admiral, and in the year 1665 in the War againſt the United *Nether-Lands*, commanding in Perſon the whole Royal Navy, he with unmatchable Valor, and extraordinary Hazard of his Princely Perſon, which was beſprinkled with the Blood of thoſe, that fell by his ſide, obtained after a ſharp diſpute on the Seas between *England* and *Holland* a ſignal Victory over the whole *Dutch* Fleet, ſinking many of their ſhips, blowing up their Admiral *Opdam*, and by ſacking of *Scheveling* making *Amſterdam* it ſelf to tremble. For which great ſervices, ſo ſenſible was the Parliament, how much the *Engliſh* Nation was indebted to him, that, as a ſmall acknowledgment of his Merit, and a grateful teſtimony of their Affections, they made him a Preſent of an hundred thouſand pounds.

In *September* 1666, the City of *London* labouring under a terrible Fire (whether occaſioned by the ſupine negligence of the Baker and his ſervants, in whoſe houſe it began; or by an Helliſh combination of malicious Perſons, there having been executed

cuted the *April* before eight *Fanatical* Plotters, who confeſt at *Tyburn*, that they had ſo contrived that Fatal Scene, that it could not miſcarry, their Prediction, as to the Fire, tho not as to the reſt of their intended Tragedy, proving true to a day) he expoſed his Perſon to a thouſand Dangers to reſcue it from Deſtruction, breaking open Pipes and Conduits for Water, reaching Buckets as nimbly as any of the common people, clearing the Streets of the Crouds, that hindred the people from carrying away their goods, appointing his ſervants and Guards to conduct them to ſecure places, and in fine for ſeveral nights and days with unwearied induſtry appearing in all parts, giving neceſſary orders to prevent the farther ſpreading of the Conflagration. In requital of which his never to be forgotten Pains and diligence for the ſuppreſſing of thoſe Flames, ſome ungrateful and audacious Villains have impudently dared to calumniate him, as the Author of that dreadful Fire, than which Hell it ſelf cannot forge a falſer or blacker Lye.

In the year 1672 he again in a ſe-

cond

cond War againſt the *United Netherlands* commanded the whole *Engliſh* Fleet, behaving himſelf with ſuch gallantry, that notwithſtanding the many notable diſadvantages of wind and tide, being at Anchor, when ſet upon, and the ſucceeding Miſt, he after a long and fierce encounter put the *Dutch* to flight, though with exceeding great peril of his Life, having in the heat of the engagement (when Refitting would have loſt the benefit of his Orders and Action) changed Ships oftner, than great Generals at Land have done their Horſes. Inſomuch that *De Ruiter* himſelf acknowledged His Royal Highneſs to exceed all the Admirals in *Chriſtendom* as much by His Bravery as by His Birth.

In the Year 1678. after the diſcovery of the *Popiſh* Plot, ſome Sons of *Belial* (that they might more freely vent their malice againſt the Royal Family) impudently and falſly calumniated his Royal Highneſs, not only as having publickly profeſt the *Romiſh* Religion, which yet is ſo palpable an Untruth, that it needs no Confutation; but alſo (though in direct contradiction to the depoſitions of *Oates* and *Bedlow* the

the chief diſcoverers, the laſt whereof even at his death acquitted him) as the Author of the Plot, which yet he was ſo earneſt to have ſifted to the Bottom, *that* (as the Earl of *Danby* in his Printed Caſe tells us) *It had never been brought upon the Stage, but for the Dukes Importunity.* Yet were theſe Surmiſes, how ridiculous and groundleſs ſoever, ſo cunningly by ſeditious *Boutefeus* inſinuated into the belief of the giddy Multitude, that his Majeſty, at whom theſe envenomed Arrows, tho ſeemingly ſhot at his Brother, were directly aimed, thought it convenient, *Becauſe he would not leave the moſt malicious men room to ſay, he had not removed all Cauſes, which could be pretended to influence him towards* Popiſh *Counſels*, and that he might thereby *diſcern, whether* Proteſtant *Religion and the Peace of the Kingdom were as truly aimed at by others, as they were really intended by himſelf, to deprive himſelf of the Converſation of his Royal Highneſs by commanding him to depart the Kingdom:* To which Command the Duke paying an entire ſubmiſſion and obedience, on the third of *March* 1679. took leave of his Majeſty, and, after

a

a ſhort viſit to his Daughter, the Princeſs of *Orange*, in *Holland*, retired with his Family to *Bruxels* in *Flanders*.

Thence his Royal Highneſs, having about the latter end of *Auguſt* following received the unwelcome News, that the King his Brother was ſeized with a fit of ſickneſs, haſtned over to *Windſor* to viſit him, proteſting, that, altho his Loyalty and Fraternal Affection had obliged him to perform this Duty, he was ready upon his Majeſties firſt Command not only to return into *Flanders*, but to go to the fartheſt part of the Earth.

On the Seventeenth of *September*, He came with His Majeſty, by the infinite mercy of Heaven recovered from His ſickneſs, to *London*, and on the Twenty-eighth of the ſame Month departed again for *Flanders*, whence returning about the middle of *October*, He took his journey by order of the King on the firſt of *November* for *Scotland*, where by his prudent Conduct (being by His Majeſty conſtituted High Commiſſioner of that Kingdom) He quieted the dangerous Commotions, raiſed therein by certain furious and factious

ous Zealots, and reſtored it to full peace and Tranquillity.

Coming into *England* about the latter end of *March* 1682, He was by His Majeſty, then at *Newmarket*, received with the greateſt Teſtimonies of affection imaginable. Returning again about the middle of *May* by Sea towards *Scotland*, to fetch thence his Dutches, He was by the ſingnlar Providence of Almighty GOD delivered from eminent danger of drowning, The *Gloceſter* a Third Rate *Fregate*, whereon he was imbarkt, by the negligence of the Pilot ſtriking on the ſands, and ſinking under Him, His Plate, and whatever elſe was abord, being loſt, ſeveral Perſons of Quality, who accompanied him, and of his Servants and Seamen about two hundred Perſons, whoſe unparalleld affection and generous Loyalty (when there was no hope of ſafety for themſelves) with ſhouts of joy gave thanks to Heaven for the preſervation of His Royal Highneſs, being ſwallowed up by the Waves.

So ſenſible were all the Loyal *Engliſh* of the great damage, that would have befallen theſe Kingdoms by the loſs

loſs of ſo Heroick a Prince, that ſeveral parts of this Nation have in their Addreſſes to the King ſince the return of their Royal Highneſſes, not only congratulated the happy deliverance of his only Brother, but have alſo humbly ſupplicated their Soveraign, that he would no more permit him, who is next after his ſacred Majeſty their chief hope and comfort, to be ſeparated from his Royal Preſence.

His Royal Highneſs had for His firſt Wife ANN, eldeſt Daughter to *Edward*, Late Earl of *Clarendon*, and Lord High Chancellor of *England*. She Dyed at St. *Jameſes*, on the one and Thiriteth of *April* 1671. having made him Father of a numerous Iſſue, whereof are living,

1. MARY, Born the Thirtieth of *April* 1662, whoſe God-Father was Prince *Rupert*, and God-Mothers the Dutcheſſes of *Buckingham*, and *Ormond*. On the fourth of *November*, 1677. She was by Dr. *Henry Compton*, Biſhop of *London*, and Brother to *James*, late Earl of *Northampton*, married to *William* of *Naſſaw* Prince of *Orange*.

2. *ANNE*, born in *February* 1664, whoſe God-Father was Dr. *Gilbert Sheldon*,

Sheldon, late Lord Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, her God-Mothers being her Siſter the young Lady *Mary*, and the Dutches of *Monmouth*.

In *November* 1673, His Royal Highneſs was by Dr. *Nathanael Crew*, Biſhop of *Durham*, and Son to *John* Lord *Crew*, ſecondly married to JOSEPHA-MARIA *d'Eſte*, Daughter of *Alphonſo* the III*d*. late, and Siſter to *Francis* preſent Duke of *Modena*, her Mother being *Laura Martinozza* the preſent Dutcheſs *Dowager*. By her he hath had ſeveral Children, of which is living one only Daughter, named,

CHARLOTTA MARIA, born the fifteenth of *Auguſt* 1682. and Baptized the day following by Dr. *Henry Compton*, Lord Biſhop of *London*; her Godfather being the Duke of *Ormond*, and her Godmothers the Counteſſes of *Arundel* and *Clarendon*.

Though the ambitious and deſigning Adverſaries of His Royal Highneſs imploy their utmoſt Artifice to cloud and conceal from the eyes of the People his many admirable endowments and Princely qualities; yet cannot they with any color of Truth deny him to be a moſt Glorious and Honourable Prince,

Prince, not only of a moſt high Spirit and invincible Courage, but alſo a Commander of great experience both at Land and Sea, where he has not only ſeveral times expoſed his Life for the ſafety and honour of this Nation, but alſo, where-ever he appeared, carried victory along with him, which in his abſence was not found: He is of a quick apprehenſion, and ſound judgment, ſedulous and diligent in Buſineſs, wary in Counſel, ſpeedy in execution, and in his reſolutions conſtant and inflexible: He is a kind Brother, a dutiful Subject, an obliging Husband, a tender Father, a firm Friend, and an excellent Maſter. In his Word and Promiſes ſtrictly Faithful, and in payment of his Debts punctually juſt. He is brave and generous, liberal but not profuſe, manages his own fortune diſcreetly, and yet keeps the beſt Court and Equipage of any Subject in *Chriſtendom*. He is affable and courteous to all, and (however the inveterate malice of his reſtleſs and factious Enemies may have poſſeſſd ſome credulous Perſons to the contrary) of no perſecuting or vindicative Spirit, nor hath any thing in his whole Conduct to be excepted againſt,

againſt, much leſs dreaded. He is in a word, what the *French* call *un honneſte homme*, A Perſon endowed with all the good Qualities, that make a man truly valuable, and ſeems born to retrieve the ſinking glory of the *Engliſh* Nation.

Of the Prince of Orange.

AFter the Duke of *York* & his Iſſue the next Heir to the Crown of Great *Britain* is *William Frederick Henry* of *Naſſaw*, Prince of *Orange* and Stadtholder of the united *Provinces*, only Iſſue of the Princeſs Royal *Mary*, Eldeſt Daughter of our late martyred Soveraign King *Charles* the Iſt. and Wedded on the ſecond of *May* 1641. to *William* of *Naſſaw*, only Son of *Henry* Prince of *Orange*, then Commander in chief of all the Forces of the States General both by Land and Sea,

He was born at the *Hague* on the fourteenth of *November* 1650 being nine days after his Fathers deceaſe. He had for his Godfathers the Lords States General of *Holland* & *Zealand*, and the Cities of *Delft*, *Leyden* and *Amſterdam*

and

and for Godmothers the Queen of *Bohemia* and the old Princeſs of *Orange*.

His Governeſs was the *Engliſh* Lady *Stanhope*, then Wife to the *Heer Van Hemvliet*. Being eight years of Age, he was ſent to the Univerſity at *Leyden*.

On the fourth of *Novemter* 1677. being then near Seven and Twenty years of Age, he eſpouſed the Lady *Mary*, eldeſt Daughter to His Royal Highneſs *James* Duke of *York*.

His Revenue is about threeſcore Thouſand Pounds *Sterling per Annum*, beſides Military advantages, enjoyed by his Father and Anceſtors, amounting to about thirty thouſand Pounds *Sterling per Annum* more.

He is a Prince of great valour and courage, in whom the High and Princely Qualities of his Anceſtors have always appeared, and a great Lover of Souldiers.

Of the Queen of Spain.

THe next Heir (after the forementioned) to the Imperial Crown of Great *Britain* is Her moſt Serene Majeſty the preſent Queen Conſort

ſort of *Spain*, Daughter of the Princeſs *Henrietta*, youngeſt Siſter to His preſent Sacred Majeſty of *Great Britain*, by the moſt illuſtrous Prince *Philip*, now Duke of *Orleans*, only Brother to the moſt *Chriſtian* King *Lewis* the XIV*th*. now reigning.

She was born in the year 1663. and was in *December* 1679 Married to *Charles* the II*d*. King of *Spain*.

Of the Prince Elector Palatine.

THere being left alive no more of the Off-ſpring of King *Charles* the Iſt. the next Heirs to the Imperial Crown of theſe Realms are the Iſſue and Deſcendents of *Elizabeth* late Queen of *Bohemia*, only Siſter to the ſaid King, who was on the fourteenth of *February* 1612 married to *Frederick* the V*th*. Prince Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, afterwards ſtiled King of *Bohemia*.

Of theſe the firſt is *Charles*, the preſent Prince Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine* commonly called the **Palſgrave**, from the *High-Dutch* **Pfaltzgraffe**, *Palatii Comes*, Grandſon to the ſaid Queen

Queen by her eldeſt Son *Charles Lodowick* Prince Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, lately deceaſed. His Mother was the Lady *Charlotte*, Daughter to *William* the V*th*. Landgrave of *Heſſe*, and to *Elizabeth Emilia* of *Hanaw*. He was born on the one and thirtieth of *March* 1651. and has lately married the Siſter of *Chriſtiern* the Vth. preſent King of *Denmark*.

This Prince hath a Siſter named *Louiſe*, born in *May* 1652, and now married to the *Duke* of *Orleans*, only Brother to the preſent *French* King.

Of Prince Rupert.

NExt unto the Prince Elector *Palatine* and his Siſter is the illuſtrious Prince *Rupert*, Duke of *Bavaria* and *Cumberland*, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Earl of *Holderneſs*, and Knight of the moſt noble Order of the *Garter*, born at *Prague* on the ſeventeenth of *December* 1619, not long before that very unfortunate Battel, there fought, whereby not only all *Bohemia* was loſt, but the *Palatine* Family was, for almoſt thirty years, outed of all their poſſeſſions in

Germany, till that in the year 1648 by the Famous Treaty at *Munſter Charles Lodowick*, eldeſt Brother to this Prince, had the *Lower Palatinate* reſtored to him, for which he was conſtrained to quit all his right to the *Upper Palatinate*, and to accept of an eighth Electorſhip, at a juncture of time, when his Uncle *Charles* the Iſt. King of *Great Britain* (had he not been embroiled at home by an horrid Rebellion) had been the moſt conſiderable of all other at this Treaty, and the Prince Elector, his Nephew, would have had the greateſt advantages there.

Prince *Rupert*, at the age of thirteen years, marched with the then Prince of *Orange* to the Siege of *Rhineberg*.

At the Age of eighteen he commanded a Regiment of Horſe in the *German* Wars, and being at the Battel of *Lemgou* in the year 1638 taken by the *Imperialiſts* under the command of Count *Hatzfield*, he continued a Priſoner above three years.

About the beginning of *September* 1642 he came into *England* with his Brother Prince *Maurice*, to offer his ſervice to the King his Uncle againſt a factious Party of the two Houſes, then rebelling

rebelling againſt him, and being within a fortnight after his arrival put in command over a ſmall Party of thoſe Forces, which the King had at that time gathered together, marched with them into divers parts of *Warwickſhire*, *Nottinghamſhire*, *Leiceſterſhire*, *Worceſterſhire*, and *Cheſhire*, his Forces ſtill increaſing as he marched.

Being about the middle of *October* following made General of the Horſe to the King, he ſoon after fought and defeated Colonel *Sandys* neer *Worceſter*; on the three and twentieth of the ſame moneth routed the Rebels Horſe at *Edg-Hill*; and on the ſecond of *February* following took *Cirenceſter*, and therein eleven hundred Priſoners and three thouſand Arms.

On the fourteenth of *April* 1643. he recovered *Litchfield*, taken the *March* before by the Rebels; on the eighteenth of *June* he routed *Sheffield* and *Hambden* in *Chalgrove-Field*, being the very place, where *Hambden*, who ſoon after died of his wounds there received, firſt executed the Parliaments Commiſſion for the *Militia* againſt the Kings Authority; on the twenty ſeventh of *July* he took the City of *Briſ-*

tol; he was on the twenty-fourth of *January* following created Earl of *Holderneſſe* and Duke of *Cumberland*, the Male-Line of the *Cliffords* being extinct in *Henry* the Laſt Earl; and on the two and twentieth of *March* he raiſed the ſiege at *Newark*, having got a compleat victory over Sr. *John Meldrum*, who lay before it with eight thouſand men.

On the twenty-ſeventh of *May* 1644 he forced *Rigby*, commander for the Rebels, to depart from before *Latham* Houſe, wherein that magnanimous and incomparable Lady *Charlotte*, Counteſs of *Derby*, had been eighteen weeks cloſely beſieged, and the next day ſtormed and took the town of *Bolton*; on the third of *July* having relieved *York*, wherein the then Marqueſs, afterwards Duke of *Newcaſtle*, had been nine weeks beſieged by three Armies, under the command of *Marchester*, *Fairfax*, and *Leſley*, he fought the great Battel of *Marſton-Moor*, wherein though at firſt he had much the better, yet by a wonderful and unexpected Fatallty, the fortune of the day turned, and the Rebels obtained the victory.

On

On the twenty-second of *April* 1645 he defeated *Massey* at *Lidbury*; on the seventh of *May*, fetcht off the King from *Oxford*, which *Fairfax* was about to besiege; and on the one and thirtieth of the same moneth took *Leicester* by assault.

In the year 1646, the Forces of the King his Uncle at Land being totally defeated, he transported himself after the surrendry of *Oxford* into *France*, and was afterwards made Admiral of such Ships of War, as submitted to His present Sacred Majesty, then Prince of *Wales*, to whom after divers disasters at Sea, and wonderful preservations, having been blockt up the most part of one Summer in the Port of *Kingsale* by *Popham*, and another in that of *Lisbon* by *Blake*, and having lost his Brother the valiant Prince *Maurice* about the *Caribbe* Islands by an Hurricane, he returned to *Paris*, in the latter end of the year 1652, where now almost the whole Royal Family of Great *Britain* were met together.

Departing thence with his Majesty in the year 1654, he went into *Germany*, where partly at the Imperial Court of *Vienna*, and partly at *Heidelbergh*, the

chief Seat of his Brother the Prince Elector *Palatine*, he paſſed his time in Princely Studies and Exerciſes till his Majeſties happy Reſtauration: after which returning into *England*, he was in the year 1662 made a privy Councellor, and in 1666, being joyned Admiral with the late Duke of *Albemarl*, firſt attackt the whole *Dutch* Squadron in ſo bold and reſolute a manner, that he ſoon put them to flight.

He enjoys a penſion from his Majeſtie of four thouſand pounds *Sterling per Annum*, and the Conſtableſhip of *Windſor* Caſtle.

Of the reſt of the Iſſue of Elizabeth *late Queen of* Bohemia

After Prince *Rupert*, the next Heirs to the Crown of Great *Britain* are three *French* Ladies, Daughters to Prince *Edward* lately deceaſed, a younger Son of the Queen of *Bohemia*. Of theſe the eldeſt is married to the Duke *d' Enguien*, eldeſt Son to the Prince of *Conde*, and the ſecond to *John Frederick* Duke of *Brunſwick* and *Lunenburgh* at *Hanover*. The Princeſs Dowager, Mother

ther of theſe three Ladies, is Siſter to the late Queen of *Poland*, and Coheir to the laſt Duke of *Nevers* in *France*.

Theſe three Ladies have amongſt them a Revenue of above twelve thouſand pounds *Sterling per Annum*.

Laſt of all is the Princeſs *Sophia*, youngeſt Daughter to the Queen of *Bohemia*, whoſe eldeſt Siſters are deceaſed unmarried.

She was born at the *Hague* on the thirtieth of *October* 1630, and was in 1658 married to *Erneſt Auguſte*, Duke of *Brunſwick* and *Lunenburgh*, Biſhop of *Oſnaburgh*, by whom ſhe hath three Sons and a Daughter.

She is ſaid to be one of the beſt Addreſs, and moſt accompliſht Ladies in *Europe*.

FINIS.

Books Printed for and to be Sold by *Chriſtopher Huſſey*, at the *Flower-de-Luce* in *Little-Britain*.

A Sure Guide to the *Practical Surveyor*, in two Parts.

The Firſt,

Shewing how to Plot all manner of *Grounds*, whether ſmall Incloſures, Champain-Ground, Wood-Lands, Mountains, and Dales, by the Semi-circle, Plain Table, and Chain.

As alſo, How to find the *Area*, or Content thereof, with the manner of Protracting, Reducing, and Dividing the ſame; and alſo how to incloſe a Mannor lying in a common Field, with the drawing of a Draught or Map thereof, and how to deck and beautifie the ſame.

Aud likewiſe how to convey Water from any *Spring-Head* to any appointed place.

The ſecond,

Shewing how to take the Ground-Plot of any City or Corporation: As alſo the Menſuration of Roads, High-ways,